



---

INTERDISCIPLINARY CENTER  
FOR ECONOMIC SCIENCE  
GEORGE MASON UNIVERSITY

---

# **The Political Economy of Dynamic Elections: A Survey and Some New Results**

John Duggan and César Martinelli

October 2015

Discussion Paper

Interdisciplinary Center for Economic Science  
4400 University Drive, MSN 1B2, Fairfax, VA 22030  
Tel: +1-703-993-4719 Fax: +1-703-993-4851  
ICES Website: <http://ices.gmu.edu>  
ICES RePEc Archive Online at: <http://edirc.repec.org/data/icgmuus.html>

# The Political Economy of Dynamic Elections: A Survey and Some New Results

John Duggan\*      César Martinelli†

March 21, 2015

## Abstract

We survey and synthesize the political economy literature on dynamic elections in the two traditional settings, spatial preferences and rent-seeking, under perfect and imperfect monitoring of politicians' actions. We define the notion of stationary electoral equilibrium, which encompasses previous approaches to equilibrium in dynamic elections since the pioneering work of Barro (1973), Ferejohn (1986), and Banks and Sundaram (1998). We show that repeated elections mitigate the commitment problems of both politicians and voters, so that a *responsive democracy result* holds in a variety of circumstances; thus, elections can serve as mechanisms of accountability that successfully align the incentives of politicians with those of voters. In the presence of term limits, however, the possibilities for responsiveness are attenuated. We also touch on related applied work, and we point to areas for fruitful future research, including the connection between dynamic models of politics and dynamic models of the economy.

*Keywords:* dynamic elections, electoral accountability, median voter, political agency, responsiveness

---

\*Duggan: University of Rochester, [dugg@ur.rochester.edu](mailto:dugg@ur.rochester.edu)

†Martinelli: George Mason University, [cmarti33@gmu.edu](mailto:cmarti33@gmu.edu)

## Contents

<b>1</b>	<b>Introduction</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>2</b>	<b>Classical electoral competition</b>	<b>4</b>
2.1	Hotelling-Downs model . . . . .	4
2.2	Calvert-Wittman model . . . . .	6
2.3	Probabilistic voting . . . . .	7
2.4	Dynamic Hotelling-Downs model . . . . .	10
2.5	Citizen-candidate model . . . . .	13
<b>3</b>	<b>Two-period accountability model</b>	<b>13</b>
3.1	Timing and preferences . . . . .	13
3.2	Electoral equilibrium . . . . .	16
3.3	Adverse selection . . . . .	18
3.4	Adverse selection and moral hazard . . . . .	26
<b>4</b>	<b>Dynamic framework</b>	<b>43</b>
<b>5</b>	<b>Pure adverse selection</b>	<b>49</b>
5.1	Existence of simple equilibria . . . . .	50
5.2	Partitional characterization . . . . .	52
5.3	Responsive democracy . . . . .	56
5.4	Term limits . . . . .	61
5.5	Extensions and variations . . . . .	66
<b>6</b>	<b>Moral hazard</b>	<b>71</b>
6.1	Pure moral hazard . . . . .	72
6.2	One-sided learning . . . . .	85
6.3	One-sided learning with term limits . . . . .	98
6.4	Symmetric learning . . . . .	110

<b>7</b>	<b>Applied work</b>	<b>114</b>
7.1	Political inefficiency . . . . .	114
7.2	Accountability . . . . .	115
7.3	Political cycles . . . . .	116
<b>8</b>	<b>Modeling challenges</b>	<b>117</b>

# 1 Introduction

By its very nature, representative democracy entails the delegation of power by society to elected officials who may use this power in ways that are not necessarily in agreement with the interests of the electorate. A main concern for representative democracy is then to devise means to discipline politicians in office to achieve desirable policy outcomes for citizens. Political thinkers since Madison, if not earlier, have considered the possibility of re-election to be an essential device in this regard.<sup>1</sup> An active and growing literature on electoral accountability has taken up this subject in the context of explicitly dynamic models. The ultimate goal of this literature is to improve our understanding of the operation of real-world political systems and the conditions under which democracies succeed or fail. This, in turn, may facilitate the design of political institutions that produce desirable sequences of policies. The literature is developing, but it has the potential to inform us about the interplay between politics and dynamic processes such as economic growth and cycles, the evolution of income inequality, and transitions to democracy (or in the opposite direction, to autocracy).

In this article, we survey and synthesize the literature on electoral accountability, focusing on the interplay between disciplining incentives, provided by the possibility of future re-election, and incentives for opportunistic behavior in the present. Drawing from this literature, we show that repeated elections can be effective in mitigating the commitment problem faced by politicians whose ideal policies are different from those desired by the majority. Moreover, we show that when office incentives are important enough and politicians and other citizens place sufficient weight on the future, *responsive democracy* is possible, in the sense that elected politicians choose policies that converge to the majority winning policy.

Although superficially similar to median voter results in the traditional Hotelling-Downs competition framework, the mechanism underlying responsive democracy is different: candidates cannot make binding campaign promises, and they do not compete for votes in the Hotelling-Downs sense; rather, they are citizen candidates whose policy choices must maximize their payoffs in equilibrium, and the responsiveness result is driven by competition with the prospect of outside challengers, who themselves are converging to the median. Both incentives and selection are important for this result: some politicians' short run incentives may be tempered by the desire to be re-elected, inducing them to compromise by choosing policies that are more desirable for voters; and politicians who are not willing to compromise will be removed, until a compromising candidate is elected. Though

---

<sup>1</sup>*The Federalist 57*, in particular, offers a discussion of the role of re-election in the selection of politicians and the control of politicians while in office.

we frame our discussion in terms of representative democracies, and consequently focus on elections as the means to discipline politicians, note that political accountability is to some extent at work in nondemocratic polities through protest, coups, and revolutions.

Convergence to the majority winner in repeated elections arises from a politician's concern for reputation and relies on the assumption of incomplete information. The desire to be re-elected may induce politicians to mimic types whose preferences are closer to those of the median voter, and if the reward for political office is large enough, then the desire for re-election induces politicians to approximate the median voter's ideal policy. Thus, repeated elections engender the possibility of responsive democracy, despite the paucity of instruments that the voters can yield, as opposed to the principal-agent model in complete contract settings. We generally assume that politicians' preferences are private information, i.e., *adverse selection*, but we consider alternative assumptions about the observability of politicians' actions. In the *perfect monitoring* model, policy choices of politicians are observable, while in the model of *imperfect monitoring*, or *moral hazard*, policy choices are observed only with some noise. We do not attempt to explore each informational assumption under general specifications of preferences, but we will survey the most relevant specifications from the point of view of existing work on the topic.

Throughout this review, we alternate the focus between two different environments that have received much attention in the literature. The first is the classical *spatial preferences* environment derived from Harold Hotelling (1929) and studied in the social choice tradition since the seminal work of Duncan Black (1948) and Anthony Downs (1957). In this environment, voters have conflicting policy preferences over a unidimensional policy space, and politicians have a short-run incentive to adopt their preferred policies rather than those favored by the median voter. As explained, above, this short-run incentive can be overcome in a repeated elections setting. The second environment is the *rent-seeking* environment studied in the public choice tradition exemplified by Robert Barro (1973) and John Ferejohn (1986). In this environment, politicians have a short-run incentive to shirk from effort while in office, or equivalently to engage in rent-seeking activities that hurt other citizens. In a repeated elections setting, the incentive of re-election may induce politicians to exert high levels of effort as the office incentive becomes more important, overcoming short-run incentives to shirk even in the presence of adverse selection and moral hazard problems.

The spatial preferences and rent-seeking environments emphasize different conflicts of interest giving rise to short-term temptation—conflicts of interests between citizens or between the citizens at large and politicians in office—which capture important and related challenges to the well functioning of democracy. For in-

stance, in the context of economic development, Acemoglu and coauthors (e.g., Acemoglu et al. 2005, Acemoglu and Robinson 2012) argue that nondemocratic institutions tend to serve an entrenched elite and in consequence suffer from a hold-up problem: they cannot commit to not expropriate wealth, so economic actors fail to make productive investments, with lower growth as a consequence. The authors claim that democratic political institutions can lead to more secure property rights and higher growth. This argument implicitly assumes that political representatives in democratic systems can commit to the protection of property rights, but a premise of the electoral accountability approach is precisely that this is impossible. From the viewpoint of this literature, electoral democracy in itself does not prevent elected politicians from serving the interests of an elite because of the possibility of capture, and a central problem that arises is to understand the extent to which democratic institutions can indeed solve the *commitment problem of politicians*.

The electoral accountability literature shows that a key disciplining device for preventing politicians in office from serving themselves, an elite, or even the citizens' myopic interests is the existence of a viable opposition in the form of credible outside challengers. Electoral democracy in itself is not enough to solve the hold-up problem, but it can lead office holders to moderate their policy choices when politicians in office face the possibility of replacement. That is, although incumbents cannot commit now to moderate future policies, the anticipation of future challengers and the incentive to win re-election serve to discipline politicians, and voters may rationally expect incumbents to choose moderate policies in the future.

The absence of a term limit is important for the possibility of responsive democracy. Elections can provide a commitment mechanism for politicians because an office holder must provide a majority of voters with an expected payoff at least equal to what they would obtain from an untried challenger; this is true at the time a politician decides whether to compromise her policy choice, and because voters know the politician will have the same incentives in the next period, they can rationally expect her to compromise in the future. When a term limit is in place, however, politicians always choose their ideal policies (or zero effort) in the last term of office, so prior to the last term, voters cannot expect an incumbent to compromise if re-elected, and the policy responsiveness result unravels. But this logic is incomplete. Assuming for simplicity that a two-period term limit is in effect, it could still be that voters re-elect an incumbent after her first term of office if her policy choice (or effort level) passes some threshold, inducing the politician to compromise in her first term, even though she chooses her ideal policy in the second term. Now it is the *commitment problem of voters* at work: if first-term politicians are expected to compromise, then a majority of voters will strictly prefer to elect a challenger rather than re-elect an incumbent, so such a threshold cannot be supported in equilibrium.

Interestingly, this logic does not apply in a two-period model, because elected challengers are also expected to shirk, so the two-period model and the infinite-horizon model with a two-period term limit possess fundamentally different incentive properties. We show that a version of the responsive democracy result does in fact obtain in the two-period model, as policy choices in the first period reflect the preferences of the median voter as politicians become more office motivated. Thus, somewhat paradoxically, the two-period model better approximates the infinite-horizon model with no term limit than the infinite-horizon model with term limits. Of course, the infinite-horizon model with term limits is not necessarily an interesting or realistic model for representative democracies, since politicians' careers usually extend beyond their term in office, so the idea that an incumbent will simply act in a completely self-serving fashion in the final period seems a extreme.

The remainder of this article is organized as follows. Section 2 overviews the classical static framework of electoral competition and provides notation and background results used throughout. Section 3 presents a basic two-period model of electoral accountability in the spatial preferences and in the rent-seeking environments, and it serves to introduce issues related to imperfect observability of preferences and policy choices in the sequel. Section 4 presents the infinite-horizon framework, encompassing much of the recent literature and introducing the concept of stationary electoral equilibrium in the dynamic model. Section 5 summarizes the literature dealing with adverse selection in infinite-horizon models. Section 6 summarizes the literature dealing with political moral hazard in infinite-horizon models. Section 7 reviews some of the applied literature connected to electoral accountability. Section 8 concludes by identifying areas for future research that are critical to the development of dynamic political economy as a field.

## 2 Classical electoral competition

In this section, we present a static electoral framework, review classical results in the theory of elections, and set notation and background results for the analysis of dynamic elections to follow.

### 2.1 Hotelling-Downs model

We begin with a basic model of electoral competition, tracing back to Hotelling (1929) and Downs (1957), that assumes the political actors are two parties and are *office-motivated*, in the sense that both parties seek to win election without regard to policy outcomes per se. The two parties simultaneously announce policy platforms; each voter casts a ballot for the party offering her preferred platform;



and parties seek to maximize their chances of winning the election. We denote the policy space by  $X$ , and for simplicity we assume throughout that  $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}$ . A continuum  $N$  of voters is partitioned in a finite set  $T = \{1, \dots, n\}$  of types, with  $n \geq 2$ , and each voter type  $j \in T$  has policy preferences given by the utility function  $u_j: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ . Assume:

- (A1) For each  $j \in T$ ,  $u_j$  has unique maximizer  $\hat{x}_j \in X$ , which is the *ideal policy* of the type  $j$  citizen, and furthermore types are indexed in order of their ideal policies, i.e.,

$$\hat{x}_1 < \hat{x}_2 < \dots < \hat{x}_n. \quad (1)$$

- (A2) For all  $j \in T$  and all  $x, y \in X$  with  $x > y$ , the utility difference  $u_j(x) - u_j(y)$  is strictly increasing in  $j$ , i.e., preferences are *supermodular*.

These assumptions admit two simple formulations of utility that we rely on for special cases. A common specification is *quadratic utility*, in which case  $u_j(x) = -(x - \hat{x}_j)^2 + K$ , where  $K$  is a constant; this functional form determines ideal policy  $\hat{x}_j$ , and utility differences are  $y^2 - x^2 + 2\hat{x}_j(x - y)$ , which is strictly increasing in the ideal policy when  $x > y$ , fulfilling (A1) and (A2). Another is *exponential utility*, whereby  $u_j(x) = -e^{x - \hat{x}_j} + x + K$ , which determines ideal policy  $\hat{x}_j$  and also satisfies (A1) and (A2).

The distribution of types in the electorate is given by  $(q_1, \dots, q_n)$ , where  $q_j > 0$  is the fraction of type  $j$  voters. We assume the generic property that types cannot be divided into exactly equal parts, i.e., there is no  $S \subseteq T$  such that  $\sum_{j \in S} q_j = \frac{1}{2}$ . This implies that there is a unique *median* type, which we denote  $m \in T$ , defined by the inequalities

$$\sum_{j: j < m} q_j < \frac{1}{2} \quad \text{and} \quad \sum_{j: m < j} q_j < \frac{1}{2}.$$

By (A2), voter preferences are order restricted, and a result of Rothstein (1991) implies that the median type  $m$  is pivotal in pairwise voting,<sup>2</sup> in the sense that a majority of voters strictly prefer policy  $x$  to policy  $y$  if and only if  $u_m(x) > u_m(y)$ . In particular, the ideal policy  $\hat{x}_m$  of the median voter type defeats all other policies in pairwise majority voting, i.e., it is the *Condorcet winner*.

The two parties,  $A$  and  $B$ , simultaneously announce platforms  $x_A$  and  $x_B$ ; importantly, we assume that the winning party is bound to its election platform. Each

<sup>2</sup>See also Gans and Smart (1996) for analysis of a single-crossing condition that is equivalent to Rothstein's order restriction.

voter casts her ballot for the party offering the preferred platform, and the probability that party  $A$  wins, which is denoted  $P(x_A, x_B)$ , therefore satisfies:<sup>3</sup>

$$P(x_A, x_B) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } u_m(x_A) > u_m(x_B), \\ 0 & \text{if } u_m(x_A) < u_m(x_B), \\ \frac{1}{2} & \text{if } x_A = x_B. \end{cases}$$

We do not impose any restriction when the parties offer distinct platforms and the median type is indifferent. Consistent with the assumption of office motivation, we assume party  $A$ 's payoffs are given by  $P(x_A, x_B)$ , and party  $B$ 's payoffs are  $1 - P(x_A, x_B)$ . A *Nash equilibrium* (in pure strategies) is a pair  $(x_A^*, x_B^*)$  of policies such that neither party can increase its probability of winning by deviating unilaterally.

Next, we state the well-known median voter theorem establishing that under the above weak conditions, strategic incentives of office-motivated candidates lead to the adoption of the Condorcet winner, a phenomenon we refer to as *responsive democracy*.

**Proposition 2.1** *Assume (A1) and (A2). In the unique Nash equilibrium of the Hotelling-Downs model, we have  $x_A^* = x_B^* = \hat{x}_m$ .*

An especially important application of the model with win-motivated parties is to the determination of tax rates and public good provision. Romer (1975) applies the median voter theorem to a model of lump sum transfers and linear taxes with Cobb-Douglas utilities. Roberts (1977) extends the analysis to more general voter preferences and establishes that the voter with median income is pivotal; this is true even when preferences over tax rates fail to be single-peaked, because it can be shown that voter preferences are nonetheless order restricted. Meltzer and Richard (1981) provide a model in which the assumptions of the latter paper are satisfied, and they examine the effect of varying the decisive voter (e.g., through a change in the franchise) and the relative productivity of the median voter.

## 2.2 Calvert-Wittman model

The basic model of elections is extended by Calvert (1985) and Wittman (1977, 1983) to model political actors as candidates with policy preferences. We add the following convexity assumption:

(A3) The policy space  $X$  is convex, and for all  $j \in T$ ,  $u_j$  is strictly quasi-concave.

<sup>3</sup>Technically, we assume that voters of the median type split their votes to create a tie, which is decided by the toss of a fair coin.

Viewing candidates as citizens, we let one candidate be type  $a \in T$  and the other type  $b \in T$ , and we assume that the political candidates have opposed preferences, i.e.,  $\hat{x}_a < \hat{x}_m < \hat{x}_b$ . Given platforms  $x_a$  and  $x_b$ , the payoffs of candidate  $a$  are now given by

$$P(x_a, x_b)(u_a(x_a) + \beta) + (1 - P(x_a, x_b))u_a(x_b),$$

where  $\beta \geq 0$  is an office benefit term that captures all non-policy rewards to holding office,<sup>4</sup> and candidate  $b$ 's payoffs are analogous. Because we allow politicians to care about both policy and holding office, politicians have *mixed motivations*.

The median voter theorem extends to the Calvert-Wittman model.

**Proposition 2.2** *Assume (A1)–(A3). In the unique Nash equilibrium of the Calvert-Wittman model, we have  $x_a^* = x_b^* = \hat{x}_m$ .*

We see that the Downsian responsive democracy result generalizes even to the case in which candidates have policy agendas that differ from the median voter's; thus, static elections, in which candidates can make binding campaign promises, lead to centrally located policy outcomes.

### 2.3 Probabilistic voting

We have thus far assumed that political actors have full information about the preferences of voters. A variation on the classical model, referred to as models of “probabilistic voting,” assumes that a parameter of the voters’ preferences is unobserved by the candidates at the time platforms are chosen. These models differ with respect to the particular parameterization used (candidates may have unobserved valences, or voters may have unobserved ideal policies) and the nature of the distribution of the parameters; early work is due to Hinich (1977), Coughlin and Nitzan (1981), Lindbeck and Weibull (1993), and Roemer (1997).

A simple way of introducing uncertainty is to assume an aggregate preference shock  $\omega \in \mathbb{R}$  to voter preferences that is unobserved by politicians. Let  $\omega$  be distributed according to a continuous distribution  $F$  with full support. We strengthen (A3) to

(A4) For all  $j \in T$ ,  $u_j$  is strictly concave,

and we assume the shock is linear: the utility of the type  $j$  voter from policy  $x$  is  $u_j(x) + \omega x$ . If utilities are quadratic, then  $\omega$  can be viewed as simply a parameter

<sup>4</sup>The convention in the literature is to mention the alternative terminology of “ego rents,” which we have now done as well.

that shifts each type  $j$  voter's ideal policy by the amount  $\omega/2$ . Given distinct platforms  $x_a$  and  $x_b$ , voters are indifferent between the platforms with probability zero; thus, for almost all shocks  $\omega$ , candidate  $a$  wins if and only if the set

$$\{j \in T : u_j(x_a) + \omega x_a > u_j(x_b) + \omega x_b\}$$

contains a majority of voter types. By our supermodularity assumption (A2), this occurs if and only if the median type prefers candidate  $a$ 's platform, i.e.,  $u_m(x_a) + \omega x_a > u_m(x_b) + \omega x_b$ .

Therefore, assuming  $x_a < x_b$ , candidate  $a$  wins if and only if

$$\omega < \frac{u_m(x_a) - u_m(x_b)}{x_b - x_a},$$

and the function

$$H(x_a, x_b) \equiv F\left(\frac{u_m(x_a) - u_m(x_b)}{x_b - x_a}\right)$$

gives the probability that candidate  $a$  wins. Then candidate  $a$ 's payoff is

$$H(x_a, x_b)(u_a(x_a) + \beta) + (1 - H(x_a, x_b))u_a(x_b),$$

with candidate  $b$ 's payoffs defined analogously.

Due to non-convexities of payoffs, discussed below, equilibrium may require mixed strategies on the part of candidates. Nevertheless, in the model with *pure policy motivation*, i.e.,  $\beta = 0$ , Roemer (1997) establishes existence in pure strategies when the probability of winning is log concave. It is straightforward to show that, in contrast to the median voter theorem, candidates adopt distinct equilibrium platforms.

**Proposition 2.3** *Assume (A1)–(A4). In the probabilistic voting model with pure policy motivation, assume that for all  $x_a$  and  $x_b$  with  $x_a \leq x_b$ , the functions  $H(x_a, x_b)$  and  $1 - H(x_a, x_b)$  are, respectively, log-concave in  $x_a$  and in  $x_b$ . Then there is a Nash equilibrium, and in every Nash equilibrium  $(x_a^*, x_b^*)$ , we have  $x_a^* < x_b^*$ .*

The case of mixed motives becomes complicated by the possibility that one candidate's best response may be to "jump over" the other in order to capture the office benefit  $\beta$  with higher probability. To extend the existence result to mixed motives and to provide an exact equilibrium characterization, we consider the *symmetric probabilistic voting model* as the special case such that  $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}$  is an interval centered at zero; for all  $j \in T$ ,  $u_j$  is quadratic with  $\hat{x}_a = -\hat{x}_b$ ; the ex ante ideal policy of the median voter is zero, i.e.,  $\hat{x}_m = 0$ ; and for all  $x$ ,  $F(x) = 1 - F(-x)$ . In this

case, the probability that the perturbed ideal policy of the median voter is less than  $x$  is just the probability that  $\omega \leq 2x$ , which is just  $F(2x)$ . Note that (up to labeling of types), assumptions (A1)–(A4) are satisfied in this special case. The following is established by Bernhardt, Duggan, and Squintani (2009).

**Proposition 2.4** *In the symmetric probabilistic voting model with mixed motivation, where (A1)–(A4) are satisfied, assume that  $u_a$  and  $u_b$  are differentiable and that  $F$  is log-concave. Then there is a unique symmetric Nash equilibrium,  $(x^*, -x^*)$ , and  $x^*$  is defined as follows: if  $|u'_a(0)| \leq 2\beta f(0)$ , then  $x^* = 0$ ; and otherwise,  $x^*$  is the unique negative solution to*

$$-\frac{u'_a(x)}{u_a(x) + \beta - u_a(-x)} = 2f(0).$$

An implication is that increased office benefit leads candidates to adopt more moderate platforms. In fact, if candidates are sufficiently office motivated or the location of the median voter is known with high enough precision, i.e.,  $2\beta f(0) \geq |u'_a(0)|$ , then we obtain exact coincidence of policy platforms, and analogous to the median voter theorem, the candidates both locate at the median of the distribution of medians in the unique equilibrium. Thus, an ex ante form of the responsive democracy result extends to the model with probabilistic voting and sufficiently office-motivated candidates.

The best response problem of a candidate with mixed motives is analogous to that of a first-term office holder in the moral hazard model covered in Subsection 3.4, so it is instructive to consider the non-convexity problem mentioned above and the role of log concavity in solving this problem. It is clear that because the candidate's objective function involves the term  $H(x_a, x_b)u_a(x_a)$ , it need not be quasi-concave. We can gain insight by transforming the problem into a constrained optimization problem in which the candidate chooses policy  $x$  and a winning probability  $p$  as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} \max_{(x,p)} p(u_a(x_a) - u_a(x_b) + \beta) \\ \text{s.t. } p \leq H(x, x_b), \end{aligned}$$

where we omit the constant term  $u_a(x_b)$  and (for expositional purposes) restrict the problem to  $x \leq x_b$ . The solutions to this problem correspond to the best policies of candidate  $a$  given  $x_b$ , subject to the restriction  $x \leq x_b$ . Although the objective function above is nicely behaved, the constraint set is not in general convex, and it is possible in principle that the best response problem has multiple solutions; see Figure 1.

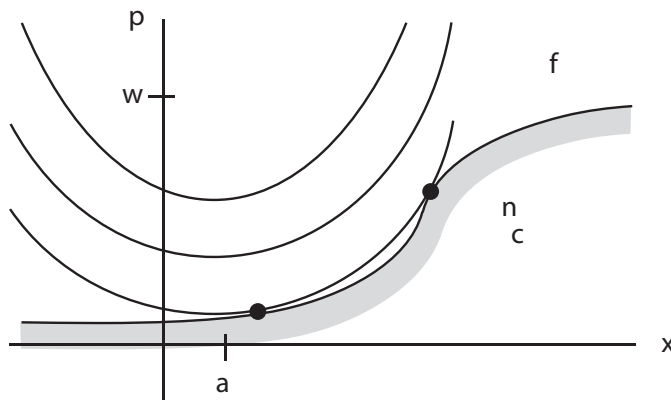


Figure 1: Multiple best responses

We can, however, translate the constrained optimization problem to log form as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} \max_{(x,p)} \ln(p) + \ln(u_a(x_a) - u_a(x_b) + \beta) \\ \text{s.t. } \ln(p) \leq \ln(H(x, x_b)). \end{aligned}$$

The objective function of the transformed problem continues to be concave, and we assume  $\ln(H(x, x_b))$  is concave in  $x$ , which implies that the constraint set is convex; see Figure 2. Thus, candidate  $a$  has a unique optimal policy subject to  $x \leq x_b$ , and when the politician is policy motivated, this policy will be globally optimal, obviating the need for mixed strategies.

## 2.4 Dynamic Hotelling-Downs model

The classical framework of electoral competition, in its diverse forms, has an important implication: in a representative democracy, competition leads politicians to adopt moderate policy platforms when office benefit is sufficiently great. This regularity is predicated on the assumptions that candidates have the ability to commit their policy choices and that elections are temporally isolated. In reality, however, elections are repeated, and we cannot dismiss the effect of linkages across time and the importance of time preferences in determining plausible sequences of policies. For instance, Bertola (1993) and Alesina and Rodrik (1994) appeal to the median voter theorem within each period in the context of growth models; more in line with the treatment here, Basseto and Benhabib (2006) provide conditions for the order restriction to be satisfied over sequences of policies in a dynamic economy.

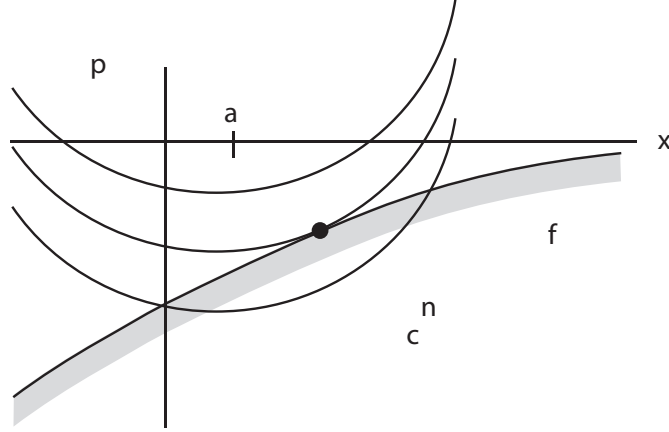


Figure 2: Log concavity

Under reasonable assumptions, it turns out that if candidates can commit to *sequences* of policies, then the median voter results persists in a strong form. To formalize this, we return to the Hotelling-Downs model and strengthen (A2) to:

(A5) There exist constants  $\theta_j$  and  $\kappa_j$  for each type  $j \in T$  and functions  $v: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  and  $c: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  such that for all  $x \in X$ ,

$$u_j(x) = \theta_j v(x) - c(x) + \kappa_j,$$

where  $\theta_1 < \theta_2 < \dots < \theta_n$ .

Extending voter preferences to lotteries via expected utility, a straightforward argument (see Duggan 2014b) shows that given any two lotteries on the policy space, say  $L$  and  $L'$ , the difference in expected utility,  $\mathbb{E}_L[u_j(x)] - \mathbb{E}_{L'}[u_j(x)]$ , is monotonic in the type  $j$ . Therefore, voter preferences over lotteries are order restricted, and again the median type  $m$  is pivotal in pairwise voting. For example, we obtain quadratic utility  $u_j(x) = -(x - \hat{x}_j)^2 + K_j$  by setting  $v(x) = 2x$ ,  $c(x) = x^2$ ,  $\theta_j = \hat{x}_j$ , and  $\kappa_j = -\hat{x}_j^2 + K_j$ . For another example, we obtain exponential utility  $u_j(x) = -e^{x-\hat{x}_j} + x + K_j$ , via a scalar transformation by  $e^{-\hat{x}_j}$ , upon setting  $v(x) = x$ ,  $c(x) = e^x$ ,  $\theta_j = e^{\hat{x}_j}$ , and  $\kappa_j = e^{\hat{x}_j} K_j$ . In Basseto and Benhabib's (2006) economy, all households trade off a measure of distortions against the redistribution implied by the distortions, with households of different wealth disagreeing about the optimal trade-off; we can think about  $\theta_j v(x)$  as the redistributed gains (or losses) associated to policy, and about  $c(x)$  as the associated distortion losses.

To apply these observations to the dynamic policy model, assume that in an initial election, two office-motivated parties simultaneously announce sequences,

$\mathbf{x}_A$  and  $\mathbf{x}_B$ , of policy platforms. Thus, party  $A$ 's platform is  $\mathbf{x}_A = (x_A^1, x_A^2, \dots) \in X^\infty$ , and likewise for party  $B$ 's platform. Assume the discount factor  $\delta \in [0, 1)$  is common to all voters and that voters evaluate sequences of policies according to their discounted utility; for example, party  $A$ 's platform is preferable to  $B$ 's for type  $j$  voters if and only if

$$(1 - \delta) \sum_{t=1}^{\infty} \delta^{t-1} u_j(x_A^t) > (1 - \delta) \sum_{t=1}^{\infty} \delta^{t-1} u_j(x_B^t),$$

where  $1 - \delta$  is a normalizing constant. The left-hand side of the latter inequality is equivalent to the type  $j$  voter's expected utility from the lottery  $L$  that puts probability  $(1 - \delta)\delta^{t-1}$  on policy  $x_A^t$ , and the right-hand side is equivalent to the lottery  $L'$  that puts probability  $(1 - \delta)\delta^{t-1}$  on  $x_B^t$ . That is, the discounted utility from a sequence of policies is mathematically equivalent to the expected utility from a particular lottery, and by (A5) it follows that the median type  $m$  is pivotal in pairwise votes over policy streams.

A dynamic median voter theorem for the model with unlimited commitment is immediate: when all policy streams are feasible, the unique Nash equilibrium is for both parties to commit to the ideal policy stream  $(\hat{x}_m, \hat{x}_m, \dots)$  for the median voter. But a more general result is possible. Assume that the set of feasible policy streams is  $\mathbf{Y} \subseteq X^\infty$ , perhaps reflecting the productivity of a durable capital good in a growth economy, and assume that the median voter type has unique ideal feasible policy stream  $\hat{\mathbf{x}}_m$ .

**Proposition 2.5** *Assume (A1) and (A5). In the unique Nash equilibrium of the dynamic Hotelling-Downs model with commitment to streams of policies, we have  $\mathbf{x}_A = \mathbf{x}_B = \hat{\mathbf{x}}_m$ .*

A premise of representative democracy is, however, that politicians have discretionary power once in office, and the assumption that parties or candidates can commit to policy for an infinite sequence of periods (or even a single period) can reasonably be questioned. Duggan and Fey (2006) maintain the Downsian assumption that parties can commit to policy choices in the current period. They show that the median voter theorem is sensitive to the time preferences of voters and parties: when voters and parties are not too patient, there is a unique subgame perfect path of play (even if complex punishments are possible), and in equilibrium both parties locate at the median; but when players place more weight on future periods than the current one, arbitrary paths of policies can be supported in equilibrium. Alesina (1988) studies a repeated two-party model with probabilistic voting and shows that when candidates cannot commit to policies, Nash-reversion equilibria can be used to support non-trivial equilibria in which candidates' choices diverge from their ideal policies on the equilibrium path of play.



## 2.5 Citizen-candidate model

The commitment assumption is dropped entirely in the citizen-candidate models of Osborne and Slivinski (1996) and Besley and Coate (1997), where campaigns are viewed as non-binding. In this setting, voters elect a candidate to office, that politician selects a policy, and the game ends. In equilibrium, the winning candidate simply chooses her ideal policy, and in two-candidate equilibria, each citizen simply votes for the candidate whose ideal policy is preferred. Thus, policy choices degenerate, and there is no scope for responsive democracy in the model.

Once we introduce dynamics into the electoral framework, however, informational considerations rise to the fore and can play an important role in escaping the shirking equilibrium. It may be that politicians' preferences are difficult to ascertain before they are elected, and that the policy choices made by politicians while in office may be observed only with noise. The literature on electoral accountability, which is the subject of the remainder of this review, addresses these issues: elections are modeled as a repeated game in which politicians are citizen-candidates (who cannot make binding campaign promises) and have private information about political variables (either their preferences or policy choices or both) relevant to voters. These aspects of elections interact in complex and interesting ways, permitting the analysis of a simple class of equilibria and informing our understanding of the possibility of responsive democracy.

## 3 Two-period accountability model

### 3.1 Timing and preferences

This subsection introduces the basic ideas and themes of the accountability literature in a simple model. As in the previous section, we consider a continuum of citizens,  $N$ , partitioned into a finite set of types  $T = \{1, \dots, n\}$ , with  $n \geq 2$  and  $q_j > 0$  denoting the fraction of type  $j \in T$  in the population. Now, there are two periods,  $t = 1, 2$ . In period 1, a politician is randomly drawn from the population of citizens, with each type  $j$  having probability  $p_j > 0$ , and chooses a policy  $x_1 \in X$ , where  $X$  is a convex (possibly unbounded) subset of  $\mathbb{R}$ . In period 2, the politician in office, the *incumbent*, faces a randomly drawn *challenger*, with each type  $j$  having probability  $p_j$ . The winner of the election chooses a policy  $x_2 \in X$ , and the game ends.

Each period, the policy choice  $x_t$  generates a policy outcome  $y_t$  in a nonempty, convex (possibly unbounded) outcome space  $Y \subseteq \mathbb{R}$ . Technically, neither politicians' types nor actions are directly observable by voters, but policy outcomes are. We consider two possibilities: under *perfect monitoring*, the policy outcome is deterministic and equal to the policy choice; under *imperfect monitoring*, the policy

outcome depends stochastically on the policy choice. We capture both environments by assuming that outcomes are realized from a distribution function  $F(\cdot|x)$  given policy choice  $x$ . Under perfect monitoring, we set  $Y = X$  and let the distribution of outcomes be degenerate on  $x$ , and under imperfect monitoring, we set  $Y = \mathbb{R}$  and assume that  $F(\cdot|x)$  is continuous with jointly differentiable, positive density  $f(y|x)$ .

As in the citizen-candidate model, we assume that neither the incumbent nor the challenger can make binding promises before an election. A related point, which does not arise in the static model of elections, is that we also assume voters cannot commit their vote, so that voting as well as policy making must be time consistent. Figure 3 illustrates the timeline of events in the two-period model. First, nature chooses the incumbent's type. Once in office, the incumbent chooses the first-period policy action  $x_1$ . Next, a publicly observed outcome  $y_1$  is realized. Then voters vote to re-elect the incumbent or not. Finally, the winner of the election chooses the second-period policy  $x_2$ , and the policy outcome  $y_2$  is realized.

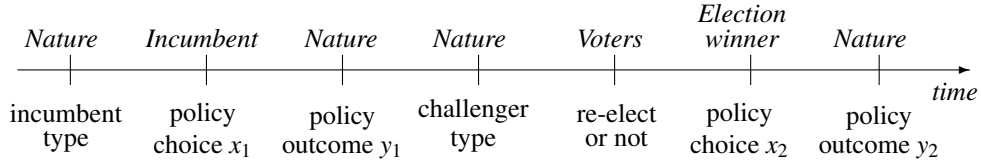


Figure 3: Timeline in two-period model

Given policy choice  $x$  and outcome  $y$  in any period, type  $j$  citizens obtain a payoff of  $u_j(y)$  if not in office and a payoff of  $w_j(x) + \beta$  if they hold office during the period, where  $u_j: Y \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  and  $w_j: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  are type-dependent functions, and  $\beta \geq 0$  represents the benefits of holding office. Total payoffs for voters and politicians are the sum of per-period payoffs.

We consider two possible specifications of payoffs in the model.

**Spatial preferences** We assume that citizens of each type possess policy preferences, and that holding office does not change a citizen's policy preferences, although it may convey a positive benefit. We assume  $X = [\underline{x}, \bar{x}]$  is a closed and bounded interval, and we assume perfect monitoring, so that  $Y = [\underline{x}, \bar{x}]$ . Utility for policies has the simple form

$$u_j(x) = w_j(x) = \theta_j v(x) - c(x) + \kappa_j,$$

where  $v: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is a continuously differentiable, concave, and strictly increasing

function,  $c: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is a continuously differentiable, strictly convex, and strictly increasing function,  $\theta_1 < \theta_2 < \dots < \theta_n$  are type-dependent parameters, and  $\kappa_j$  is a constant that can depend on type. Without loss of generality, we assume  $u_j = w_j$ ,  $v$ , and  $c$  take non-negative values. Under our assumptions, each voter type  $j$  has an ideal policy  $\hat{x}_j$ , and these ideal policies are ordered by type, as in (1). We again assume a generic distribution of types among voters, so there is a unique median type  $m$ . Assumptions (A1)–(A5) are satisfied by voters' preferences in this environment, and for example, we admit the quadratic and exponential functional forms,

$$u_j(x) = -(x - \hat{x}_j)^2 + K_j \quad \text{and} \quad u_j(x) = -e^{x - \hat{x}_j} + x + K_j,$$

with constant  $K_j$  appropriately chosen.<sup>5</sup> In particular, the median type is pivotal in pairwise voting over lotteries over policy. In this version of the model, citizen types can be interpreted as ideological groups with different policy preferences; an alternative is that citizens have common preferences but that the costs and benefits of policy choices are distributed unevenly among citizens, e.g., when all citizens prefer more public good but are taxed differentially due to variation in income.

**Rent-seeking** In this environment, all voters have increasing preferences over policy outcomes, while a politician who holds office incurs a cost for higher policy choices. We assume  $X = \mathbb{R}_+$  and imperfect monitoring, so that  $Y = \mathbb{R}$ . Utility has the simple form

$$u_j(y) = u(y) \quad \text{and} \quad w_j(x) = v(x) - \frac{1}{\theta_j} c(x) + \kappa_j,$$

where  $u: Y \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is continuous and strictly increasing,  $v: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is continuously differentiable, concave, and strictly increasing,  $c: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_+$  is continuously differentiable, strictly convex, and has positive derivative, and  $0 < \theta_1 < \theta_2 < \dots < \theta_n$  are type-dependent parameters. We assume that if in office, each politician type has an optimal policy  $\hat{x}_j$ . As in the spatial preferences environment, the ideal policies of office holders are ordered according to type, as in (1). Again, assumptions (A1)–(A5) are satisfied by voters' preferences, and we admit the quadratic and exponential functional forms,<sup>6</sup>

$$w_j(x) = -(x - \hat{x}_j)^2 + K_j \quad \text{and} \quad w_j(x) = -e^{x - \hat{x}_j} + x + K_j.$$

<sup>5</sup>We argue this following (A5), above. The fact that the exponential form is obtained via a scalar transformation by  $e^{-\hat{x}_j}$  does not affect the analysis of the spatial preferences model.

<sup>6</sup>In the rent-seeking environment, we obtain quadratic preferences via a scalar transformation by  $1/\hat{x}_j$ . This does not affect supermodularity of politician payoffs, established in Proposition 3.5.

Note that we can assume politicians share the voters' preferences over policy by setting the term  $v(x) = \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x]$  equal to the expected utility from policy outcomes generated by the choice  $x$ , in which case an office holder differs from other citizens only by the cost term  $(1/\theta_j)c(x)$ . In this version of the model, policy can be viewed as a level of public good or (the inverse of) corruption, and politician types then reflect different abilities to provide the public good or a distaste for corruption while in office.

### 3.2 Electoral equilibrium

A strategy for the incumbent of type  $j$  is a pair  $\pi_j = (\pi_j^1, \pi_j^2)$ , where

$$\pi_j^1 \in \Delta(X) \quad \text{and} \quad \pi_j^2: X \times Y \rightarrow \Delta(X),$$

specifying policy choices in period 1 and policy choices in period 2 for each possible previous policy choice and observed outcome.<sup>7</sup> Here,  $\pi_j^1$  has the form of a mixed strategy (a distribution over policy choices), but in the infinite-horizon framework we will interpret  $\pi_j^1$  as the distribution of pure strategies used by type  $j$  politicians; that is, given a subset  $Z \subseteq X$  of policies,  $\pi_j^1(Z)$  is the fraction of type  $j$  politicians who choose policies in  $Z$ . For tractability, we impose the restriction that the distribution  $\pi_j^1$  has finite support for each type. A strategy for the challenger of type  $j$  is a mapping

$$\gamma_j: Y \rightarrow \Delta(X),$$

specifying policy choices in period 2 for each policy type and observed outcome. A strategy for a voter of type  $j$  is a mapping

$$\rho_j: Y \rightarrow [0, 1],$$

where  $\rho_j(y)$  is the probability of a vote for the incumbent given outcome  $y$ . A belief system for voters is a probability distribution  $\mu(\cdot|y_1)$  on  $T \times X$  as a function of the observed outcome.

A strategy profile  $\sigma = (\pi_j, \gamma_j, \rho_j)_{j \in T}$  is *sequentially rational* given beliefs  $\mu$  if neither the incumbent nor the challenger can gain by deviating from the proposed strategies at any decision node, and if voters of each type vote for the candidate that makes them best off in expectation, given their belief system for any realization of  $y_1$ . The latter requirement is needed because in a model with a continuum of voters, no single voter's ballot can affect the outcome of the election; the requirement is consistent with optimization, and it would emerge from the model if we were to

<sup>7</sup>Measurability of strategies or subsets of policies will be assumed implicitly, as needed, without further mention.

specify that with small probability, the ballot of a type  $j$  voter would be randomly drawn to decide the election.<sup>8</sup> Beliefs  $\mu$  are *consistent* with the strategy profile  $\sigma$  if for every  $y_1$  on the path of play given  $(\pi_j^1)_{j \in T}$ , the distribution  $\mu(j, x|y_1)$  is derived from  $(\pi_j^1)_{j \in T}$  via Bayes' rule.<sup>9,10</sup> A *perfect Bayesian equilibrium* of the two-period model is a pair  $(\sigma, \mu)$  such that the strategy profile  $\sigma$  is sequentially rational given the beliefs  $\mu$ , and  $\mu$  is consistent with  $\sigma$ .

Sequential rationality implies that challengers will choose their ideal policies with probability one, since they cannot hope to be re-elected, so that  $\gamma_j(\hat{x}_j|y_1) = 1$  for all  $y_1$ . This implies that the expected payoff of electing the challenger for a voter of type  $j$  is

$$V_j^C = \sum_k p_k \mathbb{E}[u_j(y)|\hat{x}_k].$$

Similarly, sequential rationality implies  $\pi_j^2(\hat{x}_j|x_1, y_1) = 1$  for all  $x_1$  and all  $y_1$ , so the expected payoff from re-electing the incumbent is

$$V_j^I(y_1) = \sum_k \mu_T(k|y_1) \mathbb{E}[u_j(y)|\hat{x}_k],$$

where  $\mu_T(j|y_1)$  is the marginal distribution of the incumbent's type given policy outcome  $y_1$ . Since the median voter is pivotal, the incumbent is thus re-elected if  $V_m^I(y_1) > V_m^C$  and only if  $V_m^I(y_1) \geq V_m^C$ . Sequential rationality does not pin down the votes of voters when they are indifferent between the incumbent and challenger; we say the equilibrium is *deferential* if voters favor the incumbent when indifferent, so that the incumbent is re-elected if and only if  $V_m^I(y_1) \geq V_m^C$ .

This general formulation of deferential equilibrium implies that there is an *acceptance set* of policy outcomes such that the incumbent is re-elected with probability one after realizations in this set and loses for sure after realizations outside the set:

$$A = \{y_1 \in Y : V_m^I(y_1) \geq V_m^C\}.$$

We say an equilibrium is *monotonic* if the acceptance set is closed, and if for every policy outcome belonging to the acceptance set, increasing the median voter's utility maintains inclusion in the acceptance set. Formally, for all  $y \in A$  and all

<sup>8</sup>In the terminology of Fearon (1999), voters focus on the problem of "selection," rather than "sanctioning." See his essay for arguments in support of this behavioral postulate.

<sup>9</sup>Bayesian updating is well-defined, as we only consider equilibria in which the mixtures  $\pi_j^1$  have finite support.

<sup>10</sup>In the model with perfect monitoring, we add the assumption that the marginal on policy choices,  $\mu_X(j, x|y_1)$ , places probability one on  $x = y_1$ . This emulates the model in which policy outcomes are observable and chosen directly by the office holder.

$y' \in Y$  such that  $u_m(\alpha y' + (1 - \alpha)y)$  is weakly increasing in  $\alpha \in [0, 1]$ , we have  $\alpha y' + (1 - \alpha)y \in A$ . In the environments we consider, this implies that  $A$  is convex, and in the spatial preferences model, that if  $A$  is nonempty, then  $\hat{x}_m \in A$ . The monotonicity condition imposes a link between the voters' utilities over policy outcomes and the informational content of those outcomes in the first period. There could of course be perfect Bayesian equilibria in which this link does not exist—in the spatial environment with perfect monitoring, for example, it could be that the median voter's ideal policy is not chosen in equilibrium, and that voters update negatively following a choice of the median policy off the path of play—but the posited linkage seems natural in the electoral context and simplifies the equilibrium analysis of the model.

An *electoral equilibrium* is a perfect Bayesian equilibrium that is deferential and monotonic. We consider the implications of this equilibrium concept in the context of the models with and without observable policy choices; as we will see, several interesting properties that emerge in the simple two-period model persist in the infinite-horizon model without term limits.

Before proceeding to the general analysis, we begin with the straightforward observation that a version of the model in which the incumbent's type is observed by voters is obtained by specifying that the prior  $p$  on the politician's type is degenerate on some type  $j$ . Then Bayesian updating does not occur, and we assume that for all policy outcomes  $y_1$  (including realizations off the path of play), we have  $\mu_T(j|y_1) = 1$ . This implies that the median voter's expected payoff  $V_m^I(y_1)$  is constant, and thus either  $A = \emptyset$  or  $A = Y$ , and the median voter's choice  $\rho_m \in \{0, 1\}$  is constant. Then the first-period office holder solves

$$\max_{x \in X} w_j(x) + \beta + \rho_m [w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta] + (1 - \rho_m) V_j^C,$$

which has the unique solution  $x = \hat{x}^j$ . That is, the absence of uncertainty about the incumbent's type removes all reputational concerns of the politician, and the equilibria of the model devolve to the trivial myopic strategies such that each type of politician chooses her ideal policy. This observation holds regardless of whether monitoring is perfect or imperfect and regardless of the preference environment.

### 3.3 Adverse selection

In this subsection, we focus on the spatial preferences environment, and we assume that the first-period policy choice,  $x_1$ , is observable; in other words, the realized policy outcome is  $y_1 = x_1$  with probability one. The two-period model with perfect information is analyzed by Reed (1994), who in contrast assumes rent-seeking preferences and examines the optimal re-election rule for voters; we return to this

work at the end of the subsection. In the current model, note that a type  $j$  office holder's maximum payoff from choosing a policy in the acceptance set is

$$\max_{x \in A} u_j(x) + u_j(\hat{x}_j) + 2\beta,$$

and, assuming  $\hat{x}_j \notin A$ , the maximum payoff from shirking is

$$u_j(\hat{x}_j) + V_j^C + \beta.$$

Thus, the office holder's choice is dictated by the comparison between  $\max_{x \in A} u_j(x)$  and  $V_j^C$ .

Of course, in equilibrium, if the first-period office holder's ideal policy belongs to the acceptance set  $A$ , then the politician will simply choose that ideal policy and be re-elected. Other office holder types may optimally choose a policy in  $A$ , in which case they choose the acceptable policy closest to their ideal policy; and the remaining types simply shirk, choosing their ideal policy and being replaced by an unknown challenger. Let

$$\begin{aligned} W &= \{j \in T : \hat{x}_j \in A\}, \\ C &= \{j \in T \setminus W : \max_{x \in A} u_j(x) + \beta \geq V_j^C\}, \\ L &= T \setminus (W \cup C). \end{aligned}$$

We refer to politicians in the set  $W$  as “winners,” in the set  $C$  as “compromisers,” and in the set  $L$  as “losers.” At times, we will refer to winning and compromising types weakly to the left and right of the median, in which case, e.g., we write  $C_L = \{j \in C : j \leq m\}$  and  $W_L = \{j \in W : j \leq m\}$ .

In this section, we first consider simple conditions such that there exists an electoral equilibrium in which all politician types choose the median ideal policy in the first period. It turns out that the incentives of the extreme types,  $j = 1, n$ , are critical in determining the possibility of this responsiveness result. Assuming these types are willing to compromise to the median, we have

$$\theta_j(v(\hat{x}_m) - \sum_k p_k v(\hat{x}_k)) + \beta \geq c(\hat{x}_m) - \sum_k p_k c(\hat{x}_k)$$

for  $j = 1, n$ , and by linearity of the left-hand side, it follows that all politician types are willing to compromise to the median. The latter condition holds when office benefit is sufficiently large, and even when  $\beta = 0$ , it holds when the distribution of challenger types is close to symmetric around the median and the median voter's utility function is close to symmetric around his or her ideal policy. In general, at an intuitive level, the condition holds as long as office benefit is large relative to asymmetries in the model.

Then we specify strategies so that all politician types choose the median  $\hat{x}_m$ . Given these strategies, on the equilibrium path, the voters' beliefs are equal to their prior, and thus the median voter is indifferent between the incumbent and the challenger, so the office holder is indeed re-elected. Off the equilibrium path, we specify that voters believe the incumbent is the worst possible type for the median voter, so deviations from the median lead to an electoral loss. These strategies and beliefs form an electoral equilibrium and show how a responsive democracy result can arise in the two-period model.<sup>11</sup> The result holds despite the fact that politicians cannot commit to policy platforms, but it is driven by the voters' incomplete information and the politicians' concern for reputation in the model.

**Proposition 3.1** *In the two-period model of adverse selection with spatial preferences and perfect monitoring, assume*

$$u_1(\hat{x}_m) + \beta > V_1^C \quad \text{and} \quad u_n(\hat{x}_m) + \beta > V_n^C.$$

*Then there is an electoral equilibrium with acceptance set  $A = \{\hat{x}_m\}$  and such that every politician type chooses the median policy in the first period, i.e., for all  $j$ , we have  $\pi_j^1(\hat{x}_m) = 1$ .*

The equilibrium constructed above illustrates total compromise, in which every politician type chooses the median policy. To provide insight into electoral equilibria with partial compromise, which arise in the infinite-horizon model, we relax our restriction on parameters. Note that as long as  $p_m < 1$ , the median voter type will strictly prefer a type  $m$  politician to an unknown challenger, i.e.,  $u_m(\hat{x}_m) > V_m^C$ . Let  $G_L = \{j \leq m : u_m(\hat{x}_j) > V_m^C\}$  denote the set of "above average" types to the left of the median; let  $G_R = \{j \geq m : u_m(\hat{x}_j) > V_m^C\}$  denote the set of above average types to the right; and let  $G = G_L \cup G_R$  be the set of all above average types. Set  $\ell = \min G_L$  and  $r = \max G_R$ . It is straightforward to see that in equilibrium, the above average types must be winning or compromising, i.e.,  $G \subseteq W \cup C$ , for otherwise they would separate by choosing their ideal policies in the first period, but then the median voter would prefer to elect such an incumbent after a policy choice that reveals that she is above average.

We next construct an equilibrium with acceptance set  $A = [\underline{x}(\beta), \bar{x}(\beta)]$  defined by two endpoints, with a focus on the lower endpoint. If the type  $\ell$  politician strictly prefers to compromise at the median rather than shirk, i.e.,

$$u_\ell(\hat{x}_m) + \beta > V_\ell^C, \tag{2}$$

<sup>11</sup>Note that there may or may not be equilibria such that  $A = [\hat{x}_m - \varepsilon, \hat{x}_m + \varepsilon]$  for  $\varepsilon > 0$  small, the issue being that below average types may pool on the endpoints of this interval, leading for example to the inequality  $V_m^I(\hat{x}_m - \varepsilon) < V_m^C$ , which contradicts acceptability of  $\hat{x}_m - \varepsilon$ .



then we set  $\underline{x}(\beta) = \hat{x}_m$ . Otherwise, this endpoint is defined so that the type  $\ell$  politician is indifferent between compromising and shirking: it is the greatest solution to:<sup>12</sup>

$$u_\ell(x) + \beta = V_\ell^C. \quad (3)$$

The specification of the right-hand endpoint is analogous. Note that  $\underline{x}(\beta)$  varies continuously in its parameters; it is increasing; and it lies strictly above the ideal policy  $\hat{x}_\ell$ .

Inequality (2) holds if politicians are sufficiently office-motivated, i.e.,  $\beta$  is high. It also holds in the model with symmetrically distributed types by risk aversion of the politician, even when politicians are purely policy motivated. Under these conditions, we obtain a partial median voter theorem in which a set of compromising politician types choose the median policy in the first period, while some other types may shirk instead. In the complementary case, where (2) is violated, we support partial compromise in equilibrium, with compromising types pooling on the endpoints of the acceptance set, which converge to the median as  $\beta$  increases. As we explain in greater detail later, the equilibrium has a *partitional* structure, in which the winning types are centrally located and form a “connected” set of types around the median, and the compromising types separate the winning and losing types.

The preceding discussion implies the following equilibrium existence result in the two-period model. Equilibria in the two cases are depicted in Figure 4, where the acceptance set is the singleton  $A = \{\hat{x}_m\}$  in case (2) holds, and it is the darkened interval in case (3) holds.

**Proposition 3.2** *In the two-period model of adverse selection with spatial preferences, there is an electoral equilibrium with acceptance set  $A = [\underline{x}(\beta), \bar{x}(\beta)]$  such that:*

(i) *if  $\beta$  satisfies (2), then  $\underline{x}(\beta) = \hat{x}_m$ , and there exists  $k \in \{1, \dots, \ell\}$  such that*

$$C_L = \{k, \dots, m-1\} \quad \text{and} \quad W_L = \{m\},$$

(ii) *otherwise,  $\underline{x}(\beta)$  is the greatest solution to (3), and there exists  $k \in \{\ell+1, \dots, m\}$  such that*

$$C_L = \{\ell, \dots, k-1\} \quad \text{and} \quad W_L = \{k, \dots, m\},$$

<sup>12</sup>Because  $u_\ell$  is strictly concave, this indifference condition can have at most two solutions, one below and one above the type  $\ell$  politician’s ideal policy.

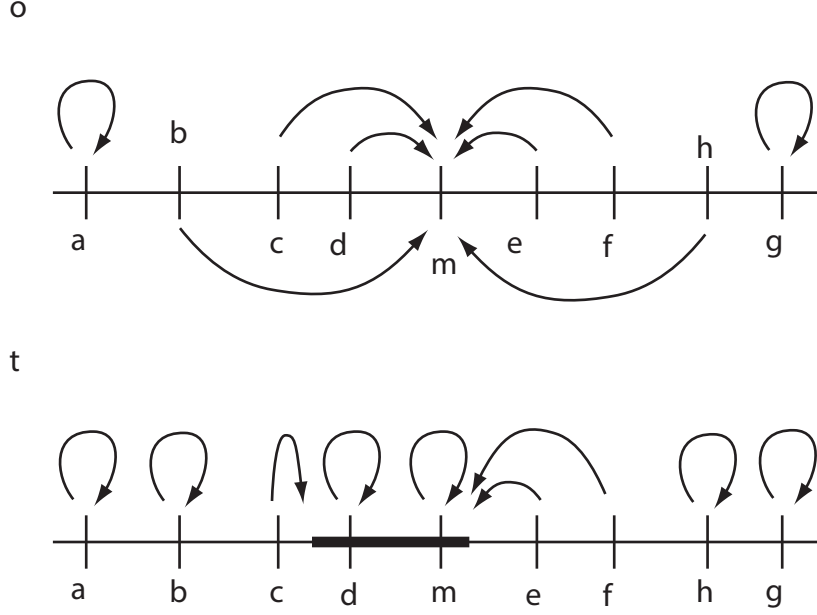


Figure 4: Partial compromise equilibria

where the right-hand endpoint  $\bar{x}(\beta)$  and the sets  $C_R$  and  $W_R$  are defined by symmetric conditions.

To complete the equilibrium construction in case  $\beta$  satisfies (2), we simply specify that politician types  $j \leq m$  choose the closest acceptable policy to their ideal policy, unless they strictly prefer to shirk. For a general value  $\theta \in [\theta_1, \theta_{m-1}]$ , a hypothetical politician with parameter  $\theta$  is willing to compromise at  $\hat{x}_m$  if and only if

$$\theta(v(\hat{x}_m) - \sum_k p_k v(\hat{x}_k)) + \beta \geq c(\hat{x}_m) - \sum_k p_k c(\hat{x}_k). \quad (4)$$

Clearly, inequality (4) holds when  $\theta = \theta_m$ , and by (2), it holds at  $\theta = \theta_\ell$ . Then linearity of the left-hand side implies that all above average types  $\ell, \dots, m$  prefer to compromise. It also follows that for below average types  $j < \ell$ , it may be that none or all prefer to compromise, or there may be a cutoff type  $k < \ell$  such that types  $1, \dots, k-1$  prefer to shirk and types  $k, \dots, \ell-1$  prefer to compromise. Regardless, if the subset  $B$  of politician types prefer to shirk, then the median voter weakly prefers to re-elect the incumbent following the choice of the median policy. Indeed,

given policy choice  $\hat{x}_m$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} V_m^C &= \sum_k p_k u_m(\hat{x}_k) \\ &= \sum_{k \in B} p_k u_m(\hat{x}_k) + \sum_{k \notin B} u_m(\hat{x}_k) \\ &\leq \left( \sum_{k \in B} p_k \right) V_m^C + \sum_{k \notin B} u_m(\hat{x}_k), \end{aligned}$$

where the inequality uses the fact that all types in  $B$  are below average. This implies

$$V_m^C \leq \sum_{k \notin B} \left( \frac{p_k}{\sum_{j \notin B} p_j} \right) u_m(\hat{x}_k) = \sum_k \mu_T(k|\hat{x}_m) u_m(\hat{x}_k) = V_m^I(\hat{x}_m).$$

Finally, given policy choice  $x \neq \hat{x}_m$ , if this is the ideal policy of a politician type that does not compromise, i.e.,  $x = \hat{x}_j$  for some  $j$  outside  $C_L \cup W_L \cup W_R \cup C_R$ , then the politician is below average, so the median voter prefers to elect the challenger. And if  $x$  is off the equilibrium path, then we assign voter beliefs so that voters believe the incumbent is the worst possible type for the median voter, so once again the median voter prefers to elect the challenger.

In case (3) holds, we specify that the type  $\ell$  politician compromises at  $\underline{x}(\beta)$ , while above average types  $\ell + 1, \dots, m$  choose the closest acceptable policy to their ideal policy, and below average types  $1, \dots, \ell - 1$  shirk. In this case, a hypothetical politician with parameter  $\theta$  compromises at  $\underline{x}(\beta)$  if and only if

$$\theta (v(\underline{x}(\beta)) - \sum_k p_k v(\hat{x}_k)) + \beta \geq c(\underline{x}(\beta)) - \sum_k p_k c(\hat{x}_k). \quad (5)$$

This inequality holds strictly at  $\theta = \theta_m$  and with equality at  $\theta = \theta_\ell$ , and therefore these politician strategies are optimal given the acceptance set; an analogous argument holds for types greater than the median. Since only above average types choose  $\underline{x}(\beta)$  and  $\bar{x}(\beta)$  in the first period, the median voter prefers to re-elect the incumbent after these choices are made. Given a policy choice  $x$  on the path of play that is not equal to one of the endpoints, there is some type  $j$  such that  $x = \hat{x}_j$ , and voters infer the politician's type. If  $x$  belongs to the interval  $[\underline{x}(\beta), \bar{x}(\beta)]$ , then the politician type is above average, and the median voter prefers to re-elect the incumbent; and if  $x$  does not belong to the interval, then the politician is below average, and the median voter prefers to elect the challenger. Finally, for  $x$  off the equilibrium path, if  $x$  is outside the interval, then we assign voter beliefs so that voters believe the incumbent is the worst possible type for the median voter; and if  $x$  belongs to the interval, then we specify that voter beliefs are equal to their prior, completing the equilibrium construction.

As noted above, if the office benefit  $\beta$  is sufficiently large, then inequality (2) holds for types  $\ell$  and  $r$ , in which case  $\underline{x}(\beta) = \bar{x}(\beta) = \hat{x}_m$ , so that all above average types choose the median ideal policy in the first period. Furthermore, if  $\beta$  is sufficiently large, then the inequality will hold for all more extreme types  $j < \ell$  and  $j > r$  as well, so in fact *all types* choose the median. Thus, Propositions 3.1 and 3.2 both exhibit equilibria in which a form of the median voter theorem holds, but they leave open the possibility of other equilibria in which some types do not choose the median.

To address this possibility and to give conditions for a stronger policy responsiveness result, we now assume that conditional on having drawn the incumbent from one side of the median type (and including the median type  $m$ ), the median voter's expected payoff of re-electing the incumbent is greater than drawing the challenger at large:

$$(B) \quad \frac{\sum_{k:k \leq m} P_k u_m(\hat{x}_k)}{\sum_{k:k \leq m} P_k} > V_m^C \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{\sum_{k:k \geq m} P_k u_m(\hat{x}_k)}{\sum_{k:k \geq m} P_k} > V_m^C.$$

This condition is satisfied if the probability of a median type challenger is sufficiently large relative to asymmetries in the model: as long as the probability of a type  $m$  challenger is positive, it is satisfied when the distribution of challenger types is close to symmetric around the median and the median voter's utility function is close to symmetric around his or her ideal policy.

The next proposition gives a strong responsive democracy result by establishing that when (B) holds and politicians are sufficiently office motivated, all politician types choose the median policy in the first period in *every electoral equilibrium*.

**Proposition 3.3** *In the two-period model of adverse selection with spatial preferences, assume (B). If office benefit  $\beta$  is sufficiently large, then in every electoral equilibrium  $(\sigma, \mu)$ , each type  $j$  chooses the median policy in the first period, i.e.,  $\pi_j^1(\hat{x}_m) = 1$ .*

To see the result, note that in an electoral equilibrium  $\sigma$ , a finite number of policies, say  $x^1 < x^2 < \dots < x^\ell$ , are chosen with positive probability in the first period, and we can write  $\mu_T(j|i)$  for the voters' posterior belief that the incumbent is type  $j$  conditional on observing choice  $x^i$ . Let  $\mu(i)$  denote the probability of observing  $x^i$  in the first period. Then we have the following helpful accounting identity, which holds for all strategy profiles:

$$\sum_{i=1}^{\ell} \mu(i) V_m^I(x^i | \sigma) = \sum_{i=1}^{\ell} \mu(i) \sum_{j=1}^n u_m(\hat{x}_j) \mu_T(j|i) = \sum_j p_j u_m(\hat{x}_j) = V_m^C,$$

where we use the fact that for all politician types  $j$ , we have

$$p_j = \sum_{i=1}^{\ell} \mu(j|i)\mu(i).$$

It follows that  $V_m^I(x^j|\sigma) \geq V_m^C$  for some type  $j$ . Now using the assumption that  $\sigma$  is an electoral equilibrium, it is deferential, and so the acceptance set  $A$  is nonempty. When  $\beta$  is sufficiently large, it follows that every politician type chooses a policy in the acceptance set and is re-elected. In this case, the accounting equation implies  $V_m^I(x^i|\sigma) = V_m^C$  for all  $i$ , so that after every equilibrium policy choice in the first period, the median voter is indifferent between re-electing the incumbent and selecting a challenger.

Suppose that there are three or more distinct policies chosen with positive probability, so  $\ell \geq 3$ . Since the acceptance set is an interval and equilibrium policy choices are optimal, it follows that: for all  $j$  with  $\hat{x}_j \leq x^1$ , type  $j$  politicians choose  $x^1$ ; for all  $j$  with  $x^1 \leq \hat{x}_j \leq x^\ell$ , type  $j$  politicians choose their ideal policy; and for all  $j$  with  $x^\ell \leq \hat{x}_j$ , type  $j$  politicians choose  $x^\ell$ . Assume without loss of generality that  $V_m^I(x^1|\sigma) \leq V_m^I(x^\ell|\sigma)$ , and note that the median voter's expected payoff from re-election,  $V_m^I(x^i|\sigma)$ , is minimized at  $x^i = x^1$ . Moreover, by concavity, we actually have  $V_m^I(x^2|\sigma) > V_m^I(x^1|\sigma)$ . Indeed, if  $x^2 = \hat{x}_m$ , then the choice of  $x^2$  reveals that the politician is the median type, so  $V_m^I(x^2|\sigma) = u_m(\hat{x}_m)$ , and the inequality follows. Otherwise, we have  $x^2 < \hat{x}_m$ , and there is some type  $j$  politician such that  $x^2 = \hat{x}_j$ , which implies  $V_m^I(x^2|\sigma) = u_m(\hat{x}_j)$ , whereas politician types pooling at  $x^1$  are further from the median, so once again the inequality follows, contradicting our observation that all equilibrium policy choices in the first period determine the same expected payoff from re-election for the median voter.

Thus, we have  $\ell \leq 2$ . Since the type  $m$  politician chooses  $\hat{x}_m \in A$  in an electoral equilibrium, we can assume  $x^2 = \hat{x}_m$  without loss of generality. We know that each type  $j$  with  $\hat{x}_j \leq x^1$  chooses  $x^1$ , and so the expected payoff to the median voter from re-election of the incumbent conditional on  $x^1$  is maximized when all types  $j < m$  choose  $x^1$ . Let  $\sigma'$  be this strategy profile. Using the accounting identity and (B), we have

$$V_m^I(x^2|\sigma') = \frac{\sum_{k:k \geq m} p_k u_m(\hat{x}_k)}{\sum_{k:k \geq m} p_k} > V_m^C = \mu'(1)V_m^I(x^1|\sigma') + \mu'(2)V_m^I(x^2|\sigma').$$

This implies that  $V_m^C > V_m^I(x^1|\sigma') \geq V_m^I(x^1|\sigma)$ , a contradiction. Thus, we must have  $\ell = 1$ , and therefore every politician type chooses the median ideal policy, completing the proof.

Note that the centripetal effect of electoral incentives highlighted in Propositions 3.1–3.3 derives from the informational asymmetry in the model. An extremist office holder has incentives to pool at the median ideal policy in order to

avoid appearing extremist, but if voters observed politicians' types, then this incentive would be removed. Thus, asymmetric information can facilitate responsive democracy, whereas full transparency leads to shirking. This observation anticipates an "anti-folk theorem" for the version of the infinite-horizon model with in which the incumbent's type is observed by voters, stated in Section 4.

The equilibria highlighted in Propositions 3.1–3.3 have a structure similar to equilibria in the infinite-horizon model. As in the current subsection, we will see that in the infinite-horizon model, when the office benefit is high enough, we obtain the responsive democracy result that all politician types pool at (or close to) the median voter's ideal policy in every equilibrium. Moreover, the partitioned form of equilibrium in Proposition 3.2 extends to an interesting class of equilibria in the infinite-horizon model. Interestingly, equilibria of the two-period model do not approximate equilibria of the infinite-horizon model with a two-period term limit. In the latter model, we do not obtain the strong responsiveness results from Proposition 3.1–3.3 when the discount rate and office benefit are high, because voters face a commitment problem: if all politician types were to choose the median policy in their first term of office, then the median voter would always prefer to elect the challenger, but this removes the incentive of first-term office holders to compromise.

The two-period model with perfect monitoring is investigated by Reed (1994), but he considers the rent-seeking environment with continuously distributed types, and rather than analyzing differential equilibria, he focusses on the distinction between performance and selection effects, and he considers the retrospective voting rule that maximizes expected effort. In response to a cutoff for re-election, politician types partition themselves in the first period into winning, compromising, and losing sets, exemplifying the partitioned structure highlighted in Proposition 3.2, and they choose their ideal effort levels in the second period. A drawback of the optimal re-election rule, however, is that information is revealed by the policy choice of the incumbent in the first period, so that the cutoff may be time-inconsistent, in the sense that it can require voters to replace an incumbent who is superior to an untried challenger.

### 3.4 Adverse selection and moral hazard

We now suppose that in addition to a politician's type being private information, the first-period office holder's action  $x$  is not observed directly by voters; rather, we assume voters observe a noisy outcome  $y$  realized from a differentiable, positive density  $f(\cdot|x_1)$ . That is, we combine adverse selection and moral hazard in the two-period framework. Furthermore, we focus on the rent-seeking environment, where voters have common preferences that are monotonically increasing in  $y$ ,

while politicians internalize the cost of the policy  $x$  and have ideal policy choices  $\hat{x}_1 < \dots < \hat{x}_n$ . Fearon (1999) studies a related model, the difference being that he assumes a random shock added directly to the voter's utility, and not to the underlying policy outcome.<sup>13</sup> Chapter 3 of Besley (2006) presents a two-period, two-type model in which the first-period office holder observes the values of a binary state of the world and preference shock, followed by a binary policy choice. Closer to the model of this section, Chapter 4 of the book (coauthored with Michael Smart) investigates a two-type model in which an office holder essentially chooses a level  $x$  of shirking, and voters observe this with noise,  $x + \varepsilon$ , but it is assumed that the first-period politician observes the policy shock  $\varepsilon$  before her choice; in addition, the policy choice of the good type of politician is fixed exogenously. Ashworth and Bueno de Mesquita (2014) consider the effect of varying voter information in two simplified models of adverse selection and moral hazard.

Chapter 4 of Persson and Tabellini (2000) contains a simplified, two-period model of symmetric learning, in which politicians are parameterized by a skill level that is unobserved by voters and politicians themselves. In this setting, voters and politicians update their beliefs symmetrically along the equilibrium path, and signaling cannot occur. Moreover, voters are assumed to be risk neutral. Ashworth (2005) considers a three-period model of symmetric learning that further differs from ours in that the skill level of a politician evolves over time according to a random walk.<sup>14</sup> Ashworth and Bueno de Mesquita (2008) use a variant of the model, one in which the voter has quadratic policy utility and a stochastic partisan preference, to establish existence and comparative statics of incumbency advantage. We consider the symmetric learning environment separately in the infinite-horizon model in Subsection 6.4.

Other work, including Barganza (2000) and Canes-Wrone, Herron, and Shotts (2001), studies a two-type model in which politicians differ in ability. In the latter paper, the voter's desired policy depends on the realization of a state of the world, about which politicians are better informed. Politicians may have an incentive to pander to voters by knowingly choosing policies that are not in the voters' best interest. Maskin and Tirole (2004) study pandering in a two-type model in which politicians differ in preferences. Austen-Smith and Banks (1989) investigate the voters' ability to discipline politicians when all politicians have the same preferences, so that the model is one of pure moral hazard.

For simplicity we take the policy choice  $x$  to be a shift parameter on the density of outcomes, so, abusing notation slightly, the density can be written  $f(y|x) =$

<sup>13</sup>The approaches are interchangeable when voters are risk neutral, but not otherwise.

<sup>14</sup>Although the model assumes three periods, the first-term office holder has private information about her ability only in the second and third terms, as her action in office are hidden from voters.

$f(y-x)$  for some density  $f(\cdot)$ , and the probability that the realized outcome is less than  $y$  given policy  $x$  is simply  $F(y-x)$ . We assume that  $f$  satisfies the monotone likelihood ratio property (MLRP), i.e.,

$$(C1) \quad \frac{f(y-x)}{f(y-x')} > \frac{f(y'-x)}{f(y'-x')}$$

for all  $x > x'$  and all  $y > y'$ . This implies that greater policy outcomes induce voters to update favorably their beliefs about the policy adopted by the incumbent in the first period. As is well-known, the MLRP implies that the density function is unimodal, and that both the density and the distribution functions are strictly log-concave. Moreover, we assume  $Y = \mathbb{R}$  and

$$(C2) \quad \lim_{y \rightarrow -\infty} \frac{f(y-x)}{f(y-x')} = \lim_{y \rightarrow +\infty} \frac{f(y-x')}{f(y-x)} = 0 \text{ when } x > x'.$$

As an example,  $f(\cdot)$  may be a normal density.

In this setting, electoral equilibrium implies that voters follow a simple retrospective rule: there exists  $\bar{y} \in \mathbb{R}$  such that they re-elect the incumbent if and only if  $y \geq \bar{y}$ , i.e.,  $A = [\bar{y}, \infty)$ .<sup>15</sup> Electoral equilibria are then characterized by three conditions. First, the threshold  $\bar{y}$  must be such that, anticipating that politicians choose their ideal policies in the second period, the expected utility of re-electing the incumbent conditional on observing  $y$  is greater than or equal to  $\sum_k p_k \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_k]$  if and only if  $y \geq \bar{y}$ . Second, each politician type  $j$ , knowing that she is re-elected if and only if  $y \geq \bar{y}$ , mixes over optimal actions in the first period, i.e., the type  $j$  politician's policy strategy  $\pi_j$  places probability one on maximizers of

$$w_j(x) + (1 - F(\bar{y} - x))[w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta] + F(\bar{y} - x)V^C. \quad (6)$$

Third, updating of voter beliefs follows Bayes rule, i.e., after observing outcome  $y$ , the voters' posterior beliefs assign probability

$$\mu_T(j|y) = \frac{p_j \sum_x f(y-x)\pi_j(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(y-x)\pi_k(x)}$$

to the incumbent being type  $j$ . Since the outcome density is positive, every outcome is on the path of play, so Baye's rule pins down the voters' beliefs; thus, in the remainder of this section, we summarize an electoral equilibrium by the strategy profile  $\sigma$ , leaving beliefs implicit.

We assume that all politicians are in principle interested in re-election, i.e.,

$$(C3) \quad w_1(\hat{x}_1) + \beta > V^C,$$

<sup>15</sup>Or  $A = \mathbb{R}$  if  $\bar{y} = -\infty$ .



so that if re-election is assured by choosing their ideal policies in the first period, then the benefits of re-election outweigh the costs. Note that an office holder can always choose her ideal policy, so it is never optimal for the politician to choose large policies for which  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] > w_j(x) + \beta$ . By (C3), it is never optimal to choose a policy below the politician's ideal policy, so there is at least one solution to the office holder's problem in the first period. Denoting by  $x_j^*$  such a solution, the necessary first order condition for a solution of the office holder's maximization problem (6) is

$$w'_j(x_j^*) = -f(\bar{y} - x_j^*)[w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - V^C]. \quad (7)$$

That is, the marginal disutility in the current period from increasing the policy choice is just offset by the marginal utility in the second period, owing to the politician's increased chance of re-election. By (C3), the right-hand side of (7) is negative, and we see that for an arbitrary cutoff, the politician optimally exerts a positive amount of effort, i.e., chooses  $x_j^* > \hat{x}_j$ , in the first term of office.

We can gain some insight into the incumbent's problem by reformulating it in terms of optimization subject to an inequality constraint. Define a new objective function

$$U_j(x, r) = w_j(x) + r[w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - V^C],$$

which is the expected utility if the politician chooses policy  $x$  and is re-elected with probability  $r$ , minus a constant term. Note that  $U_j$  is concave in  $(x, r)$  and quasi-linear in  $r$ . Of course, given  $x$ , there is only one possible re-election probability, namely  $1 - F(\bar{y} - x)$ . Defining the constraint function

$$g(x, r) = 1 - F(\bar{y} - x) - r,$$

we can then formulate the politician's optimization problem as

$$\begin{aligned} \max_{(x, r)} & U_j(x, r) \\ \text{s.t.} & g(x, r) \leq 0, \end{aligned}$$

which has the general form depicted in Figure 5. Here, level sets of the objective function are well-behaved, but the constraint inherits the natural non-convexity of the distribution function  $F$ , leading to the possibility of multiple solutions. This, in turn, can lead to multiple optimal policies and the necessity of mixing in equilibrium, as encountered in the probabilistic voting model and depicted in Figure 1.

We exploit log concavity and impose further restrictions on the risk aversion of politicians to limit the need for mixing to at most two policy choices for each type.

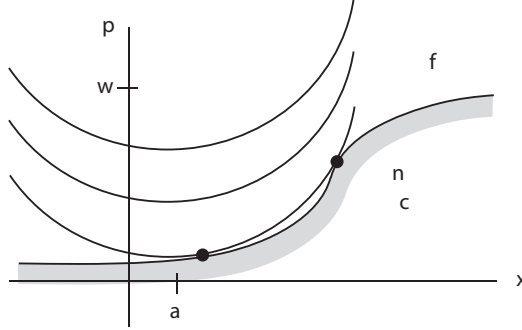


Figure 5: Politician's optimization problem

Assume that for all  $j$ , all finite  $\bar{y}$ , and all  $x, \tilde{x}, z$  with  $\hat{x}_j < x < \tilde{x} < z$ , we have

$$(C4) \quad \text{if } \frac{w_j''(x)}{w_j'(x)} \leq -\frac{f'(\bar{y}-x)}{f(\bar{y}-x)} \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{w_j''(z)}{w_j'(z)} \leq -\frac{f'(\bar{y}-z)}{f(\bar{y}-z)},$$

$$\text{then } \frac{w_j''(\tilde{x})}{w_j'(\tilde{x})} < -\frac{f'(\bar{y}-\tilde{x})}{f(\bar{y}-\tilde{x})}.$$

That is, the set of  $x > \hat{x}_j$  such that  $\frac{w_j''(x)}{w_j'(x)} \leq -\frac{f'(\bar{y}-x)}{f(\bar{y}-x)}$  is convex, and if  $x$  and  $z$  satisfy the inequality, then every policy between them satisfies it strictly. To see the permissiveness of this condition, note that by log concavity of  $f(\cdot)$ , the term  $-\frac{f'(\bar{y}-x)}{f(\bar{y}-x)}$  is strictly decreasing in  $x$ , and thus (C4) is satisfied if the coefficient of absolute risk aversion,  $\frac{w_j''(x)}{w_j'(x)}$ , does not decrease too fast to the right of the type  $j$  politicians' ideal policy. To illustrate, when the utility function  $w_j$  is quadratic, the coefficient of absolute risk aversion is  $\frac{1}{x-\hat{x}_j}$ , and when the density  $f$  is standard normal, the likelihood ratio  $-\frac{f'(\bar{y}-x)}{f(\bar{y}-x)}$  simplifies to  $\bar{y}-x$ . Thus, (C4) is satisfied in the quadratic-normal special case, depicted in Figure 6. Likewise, in the case of exponential utility, the coefficient of risk aversion is  $\frac{1}{1-\exp(\hat{x}_j-x)}$ , and again (C4) is satisfied.

The usefulness of (C4) is delineated in the next result, which implies that for arbitrary cutoffs, each type of office holder has at most two optimal policies. We let  $x_j^*(\bar{y})$  denote the greater solution to the incumbent's optimization problem and  $x_{*,j}(\bar{y})$  the least, as a function of the cutoff. Of course, standard continuity arguments imply that the correspondence of optimal policies has closed graph; in the present context, this means that the functions  $x_j^*(\cdot)$  and  $x_{*,j}(\cdot)$  are, respectively, upper and lower semi-continuous.

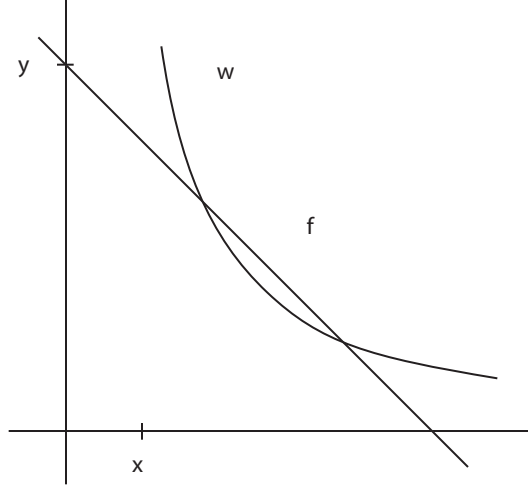


Figure 6: Quadratic-normal special case

**Proposition 3.4** *In the two-period model of moral hazard with rent-seeking, assume (C1)–(C4). Then for every cutoff  $\bar{y} \in \mathbb{R}$  and every type  $j$ , there are at most two local maximizers of the objective function (6), and the greatest and least optimal policies,  $x_j^*(\bar{y})$  and  $x_{*,j}(\bar{y})$ , are upper semi-continuous and lower semi-continuous, respectively, as a function of the cutoff.*

Suppose there are three distinct local maximizers of the type  $j$  politicians' objective function, say  $x'$ ,  $x''$ , and  $x'''$  with  $x' < x'' < x'''$ . Thus, there are local minimizers  $z'$  and  $z''$  such that  $x' < z' < x'' < z'' < x'''$ . With (C3), inspection of the first order condition (7) at  $x$  reveals that  $w'_j(z') < 0$  and  $w'_j(z'') < 0$ , and we can rewrite the first order condition at  $z'$  and  $z''$  as

$$w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - V^C = -\frac{w'_j(z')}{f(\bar{y} - z')} = -\frac{w'_j(z'')}{f(\bar{y} - z'')}.$$

By the necessary second order condition for a local minimizer, the second derivative at  $z'$  satisfies

$$0 \leq w''_j(z') - f'(\bar{y} - z')[w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - V^C] = w''_j(z') - f'(\bar{y} - z') \left[ -\frac{w'_j(z')}{f(\bar{y} - z')} \right],$$

or equivalently,

$$\frac{w''_j(z')}{w'_j(z')} \leq -\frac{f'(\bar{y} - z')}{f(\bar{y} - z')}.$$

Similarly, we have

$$\frac{w_j''(z'')}{w_j'(z'')} \leq -\frac{f'(\bar{y}-z'')}{f(\bar{y}-z'')}.$$

Since  $x''$  is a local maximizer, the first order condition holds at  $x''$ , and the second derivative at  $x''$  is non-positive, but then we have

$$\frac{w_j''(x'')}{w_j'(x'')} \geq -\frac{f'(y-x'')}{f(y-x'')},$$

contradicting (C4). We conclude that the objective function has at most two local maximizers, as desired.

We can illustrate Proposition 3.4 assuming the normal density and exponential utility,  $w_j(x) = -e^x + 1$ . Then the first order condition is

$$e^x = \frac{\Delta}{\sigma\sqrt{2\pi}} e^{-\frac{(\bar{y}-x)^2}{2\sigma^2}},$$

where  $\Delta = \beta - w_j(\hat{x}_j) - V^C = \beta - V^C > 0$ . Multiplying by negative one and taking logs of both sides, this is a quadratic equation in  $x$ , with solutions

$$x = \bar{y} - \sigma^2 \pm \sigma \sqrt{\sigma^2 - 2\bar{y} + 2 \ln \left( \frac{\Delta}{\sigma\sqrt{2\pi}} \right)}.$$

The solutions are real as long as office benefit is sufficiently high relative to the cutoff, and otherwise there is no solution to the first order condition, so that the politician optimizes at the corner by choosing zero effort. Alternatively, the solutions are real if the variance of the observed outcome is sufficiently small. Note that the optimal effort increases without bound as the office benefit becomes large; we return to the latter observation in our analysis of responsive democracy, below.

The next proposition establishes that the politicians' objective functions satisfy the important property that differences in payoffs are monotone in type. We say that  $U_j(x, 1 - F(\bar{y} - x))$  is *supermodular* in  $(j, x)$  if for all  $(j, x)$  and all  $(k, z)$  with  $j > k$  and  $x > z$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} & U_j(x, 1 - F(\bar{y} - x)) - U_j(z, 1 - F(\bar{y} - z)) \\ & > U_k(x, 1 - F(\bar{y} - x)) - U_k(z, 1 - F(\bar{y} - z)). \end{aligned}$$

An implication is that given an arbitrary value  $\bar{y}$  of the cutoff, the optimal policy choices of the types are strictly ordered by type, i.e.,

$$\text{for all } j < n, \quad x_j^*(\bar{y}) < x_{*,j+1}(\bar{y}).$$

This ordering property will, in turn, be critical for establishing existence of equilibrium.

**Proposition 3.5** *In the two-period model of moral hazard with rent-seeking, the type  $j$  politician's objective function,  $U_j(x, 1 - F(\bar{y} - x))$ , is supermodular in  $(j, x)$ .*

To see the result, consider  $j > k$  and  $x > z$ , and rewrite the inequality in the definition of supermodularity as

$$\begin{aligned} & \theta_j(v(x) - v(z)) + (F(\bar{y} - z) - F(\bar{y} - x))(\theta_j v(\hat{x}_j) - c(\hat{x}_j)) \\ & > \theta_k(v(x) - v(z)) + (F(\bar{y} - z) - F(\bar{y} - x))(\theta_k v(\hat{x}_k) - c(\hat{x}_k)). \end{aligned}$$

Since  $\theta_j > \theta_k$  and  $v(x) > v(z)$  it suffices to show

$$(F(\bar{y} - z) - F(\bar{y} - x))(\theta_j v(\hat{x}_j) - c(\hat{x}_j)) > (F(\bar{y} - z) - F(\bar{y} - x))(\theta_k v(\hat{x}_k) - c(\hat{x}_k)).$$

Since  $F(\bar{y} - z) > F(\bar{y} - x)$  and  $\theta_j v(\hat{x}_j) - c(\hat{x}_j) > \theta_k v(\hat{x}_k) - c(\hat{x}_k)$ , the desired inequality indeed holds.

The above ordering property is very useful in combination with the fact that given arbitrary policy choices  $x_1 < x_2 < \dots < x_n$  of the politician types in the first period, there is a unique outcome, which we denote  $y^*(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ , such that conditional on realizing this value, the voters are indifferent between re-electing the incumbent and electing a challenger. Moreover, this extends to the case of mixed policy strategies  $\pi_1, \dots, \pi_n$  with supports that are strictly ordered by type, i.e., for all  $j < n$ ,

$$\max\{x : \pi_j(x) > 0\} < \min\{x : \pi_{j+1}(x) > 0\}.$$

That is, there is a unique solution in  $\bar{y}$  to the equation  $V^I(\bar{y}) = V^C$ , or more explicitly,

$$\sum_k \mu_T(k|\bar{y}) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_k] = \sum_k p_k \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_k]. \quad (8)$$

We let  $y^*(\pi_1, \dots, \pi_n)$  denote the solution to the voter's indifference condition as a function of policy choices.

In addition to uniqueness, the next proposition establishes that the cutoff lies between the choices of the type 1 and type  $n$  politicians, shifted by the mode of the density of  $f(\cdot)$ , which we denote by  $\hat{z}$ .

**Proposition 3.6** *In the two-period model of moral hazard with rent-seeking, assume (C1)–(C4). Then for all mixed policy strategies  $\pi_1, \dots, \pi_n$  with supports that*

are strictly ordered by type and for all belief systems  $\mu$  derived via Bayes rule, there is a unique solution to the voters' indifference condition (8), and the solution  $y^*(\pi_1, \dots, \pi_n)$  is continuous as a function of mixed policies. Moreover, this solution lies between the extreme policy choices shifted by the mode of the outcome density, i.e.,

$$\min\{x : \pi_1(x) > 0\} + \hat{z} \leq y^*(\pi_1, \dots, \pi_n) \leq \max\{x : \pi_n(x) > 0\} + \hat{z}.$$

For existence of a solution to the indifference condition, fix  $\pi_1, \dots, \pi_n$  with supports that are strictly ordered by type, and note that the left-hand side of (8) is continuous in  $\bar{y}$ . For any  $j < n$ , let  $x_j = \max\{x : \pi_j(x) > 0\}$  be the greatest policy chosen with positive probability by the type  $j$  politicians, and let  $x_n = \min\{x : \pi_n(x) > 0\}$  be the lowest policy chosen with positive probability by the type  $n$  politicians. For all  $j$  and all  $x < x_j$  with  $\pi_j(x) > 0$ , (C2) implies that for sufficiently large  $\bar{y}$ , we have  $f(\bar{y} - x) < f(\bar{y} - x_j)$ . Then (C2) implies

$$\mu_T(j|\bar{y}) = \frac{p_j \sum_x f(\bar{y} - x) \pi_j(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(\bar{y} - x) \pi_k(x)} \leq \frac{p_j}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x \frac{f(\bar{y} - x)}{f(\bar{y} - x_j)} \pi_k(x)} \leq \frac{p_j}{p_n \frac{f(\bar{y} - x_n)}{f(\bar{y} - x_j)} \pi_n(x_n)} \rightarrow 0$$

as  $\bar{y} \rightarrow \infty$ , which implies that  $\mu_T(n|\bar{y})$  goes to one as the cutoff increases. In words, when the policies of the politicians are ordered by type, high realizations of the outcome become arbitrarily strong evidence that the incumbent is the best possible type. Similarly,  $\mu_T(1|\bar{y})$  goes to one as  $\bar{y}$  decreases without bound. Thus, the left-hand side of (8) approaches  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$  when the cutoff is large, and it approaches  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1]$  when the cutoff is small, and existence of a solution follows from the intermediate value theorem. Uniqueness follows from the fact that the left-hand side is strictly increasing in  $\bar{y}$ , from Lemma A.6 of Banks and Sundaram (1998). Standard continuity arguments imply that  $y^*(\pi_1, \dots, \pi_n)$  is continuous in its arguments.

To obtain the bound on the cutoff, consider any  $\bar{y} > \max\{x : \pi_n(x) > 0\} + \hat{z}$ . Recall that the posterior probability that the politician is type  $j$ , conditional on observing  $\bar{y}$ , is

$$\mu_T(j|\bar{y}) = \frac{p_j \sum_x f(\bar{y} - x) \pi_j(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(\bar{y} - x) \pi_k(x)}.$$

Note that for all  $k > j$  and all policies  $x_j$  with  $\pi_j(x_j) > 0$  and  $x_k$  with  $\pi_k(x_k) > 0$ , we have  $\hat{z} < \bar{y} - x_k < \bar{y} - x_j$ . Since  $f(\cdot)$  is single-peaked by (C1), we see that for all  $x_1, \dots, x_n$  such that each  $x_k$  is in the support of  $\pi_k$ , we have

$$f(\bar{y} - x_1) < f(\bar{y} - x_2) < \dots < f(\bar{y} - x_n).$$

Therefore, in calculating posterior beliefs, the coefficients on prior beliefs are ordered by type, i.e.,

$$\frac{\sum_x f(\bar{y}-x)\pi_1(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(\bar{y}-x)\pi_k(x)} < \dots < \frac{\sum_x f(\bar{y}-x)\pi_n(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(\bar{y}-x)\pi_k(x)},$$

and we conclude that the posterior distribution  $\mu_T(\cdot|\bar{y})$  first order stochastically dominates the prior, contradicting the indifference condition. An analogous argument derives a contradiction for the case  $\bar{y} < \min\{x : \pi_1(x) > 0\} + \hat{z}$ , as desired.

To see the structure of  $y^*(\pi_1, \dots, \pi_n)$  for the special case of two types using pure policy strategies, the voters' cutoff is simply the solution to  $\mu_T(2|y) = p_2$ , i.e., the cutoff is such that conditional on the cutoff, the probability the incumbent is the high type is just equal to the prior probability. Letting  $x_1$  and  $x_2$  be the policies chosen by the two types, this means that  $y^*(x_1, x_2)$  solves the equation

$$p_2 = \frac{p_2 f(y-x_2)}{p_1 f(y-x_1) + p_2 f(y-x_2)},$$

or after manipulating, it means that the likelihood of  $y$  is the same given the policy choices of the politician types, i.e.,  $f(y-x_1) = f(y-x_2)$ . Adding the assumption that the density  $f(\cdot)$  is standard normal, the cutoff is simply the midpoint of the politicians' choices, i.e.,

$$y^*(x_1, x_2) = \frac{x_1 + x_2}{2}.$$

Indeed, this characterization as the midpoint of policy choices extends to any density that is symmetric around zero.

The preceding observations allow us to graphically depict an electoral equilibrium for the case of two types. In Figure 7, we draw the indifference curves of  $U_1$  and  $U_2$  through the unique optimal policies,  $x_1^*$  and  $x_2^*$ , of the politician types given the constraint set determined by the cutoff  $y^*$ . This is reflected in the tangency condition at each optimal policy. Moreover, the voters' indifference condition implies that the likelihood of outcome  $y^*$  is equal given either optimal policy, as reflected in the equal slopes of the two tangent lines. Note that when the office benefit  $\beta$  increases, the indifference curves of the politician types become flatter, and optimal policies will move to the right, suggesting that higher office benefit leads to greater policy responsiveness.

The next result establishes existence of electoral equilibrium in the two-period moral hazard model, along with a minimal characterization of equilibria. We see that even in the two-period model, where second-period policies are pinned down

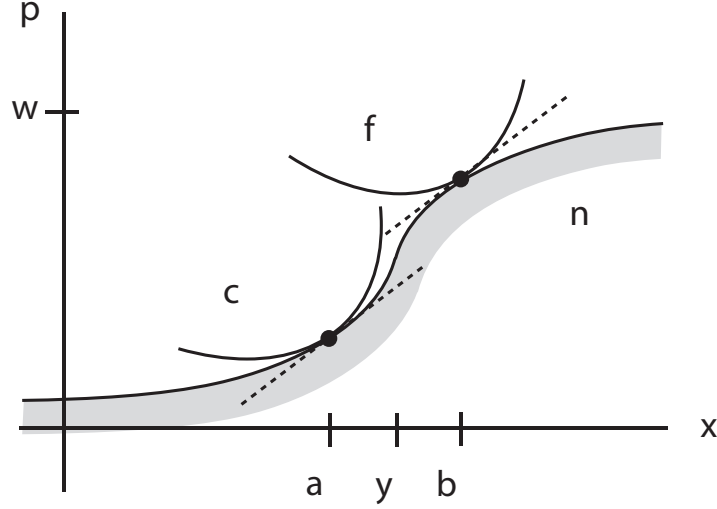


Figure 7: Electoral equilibrium

by end-game effects, electoral equilibria must solve a complicated fixed point problem: optimal policy choices of politician types depend on the cutoff used by voters, and the cutoff used by voters depends, via Bayes rule, on the policy choices of politician types.

**Proposition 3.7** *In the two-period model of moral hazard with rent-seeking, assume (C1)–(C4). Then there is an electoral equilibrium, and in every electoral equilibrium, there exist mixed policy strategies  $\pi_1^*, \dots, \pi_n^*$  and a finite cutoff  $y^*$  such that:*

- (i) *each type  $j$  politician mixes over policies using  $\pi_j^*$ , which places positive probability on at most two policies, say  $x_j^*$  and  $x_{*,j}$ , where  $\hat{x}_j < x_{*,j} \leq x_j^*$ ,*
- (ii) *the supports of policy strategies are strictly ordered by type, i.e., for all  $j < n$ , we have  $x_j^* < x_{*,j+1}$ ,*
- (iii) *voters re-elect the incumbent if and only if  $y \geq y^*$ , where the cutoff lies between the extreme policies shifted by the mode of the outcome density, i.e.,  $x_{*,1} + \hat{z} \leq y^* \leq x_n^* + \hat{z}$ .*

In proving the proposition, we must address two technical subtleties. The first is that when supports of mixed policy choices are only weakly ordered, the left-hand side of (8) is only weakly increasing, so that the equality has a closed, convex



(not necessarily singleton) set of solutions. In fact, if all politician types choose the same policy with probability one, then updating does not occur and incumbents are always re-elected, so that the voters' cutoff is negatively infinite. As policy choices of politician types converge to the same policy, this means that the cutoff either jumps discontinuously (from a bounded, finite level) or diverges to negative infinity. We circumvent this problem by deriving a positive lower bound on the distance between optimal policy choices of the different types. Indeed, we first observe that equilibrium policy choices are bounded above by any choice  $\bar{x}$  such that  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n] > w_n(\bar{x}) + \beta$ , i.e.,  $-w_n(\bar{x}) > \beta - \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ . That is, if the type  $n$  politician prefers to choose her ideal policy with no chance of re-election rather than choose  $\bar{x}$  and win with certainty, then no policy above  $\bar{x}$  can be optimal for any type given any cutoff.

Next, given any cutoff  $\bar{y}$  and any type  $j$  politician, there are at most two optimal policies, by Proposition 3.4, and each satisfies the first order condition (7). Note that  $f(\bar{y} - x) \rightarrow 0$  uniformly on  $[0, \bar{x}]$  as  $|\bar{y}| \rightarrow \infty$ , and from the first order condition, this implies that the optimal policies of the type  $j$  politician converge to the ideal policy, i.e.,  $x_j^*(\bar{y}) \rightarrow \hat{x}_j$  and  $x_{*,j}(\bar{y}) \rightarrow \hat{x}_j$ . Thus, we can choose a sufficiently large interval  $[y_L, y_H]$  and  $\varepsilon' > 0$  such that for all  $\bar{y}$  outside the interval, optimal policies differ across types by at least  $\varepsilon'$ , i.e., for all  $j < n$ , we have  $|x_{*,j+1}(\bar{y}) - x_j^*(\bar{y})| > \varepsilon'$ . By upper semi-continuity of  $x_j^*(\cdot)$  and lower semi-continuity of  $x_{*,j+1}(\cdot)$ , the function  $|x_{*,j+1}(\bar{y}) - x_j^*(\bar{y})|$  attains its minimum on  $[y_L, y_H]$ , and this minimum is positive. Thus, there exists  $\varepsilon'' > 0$  such that for all  $\bar{y} \in [y_L, y_H]$ , optimal policies differ by at least  $\varepsilon''$ . Finally, we set  $\varepsilon = \min\{\varepsilon', \varepsilon''\}$  to establish the desired lower bound.

We are interested in the profiles  $(\pi_1, \dots, \pi_n)$  such that for all politician types  $j$ ,  $\pi_j$  places positive probability on at most two alternatives, and the supports of mixed policy strategies are strictly ordered by type and separated by a distance of at least  $\varepsilon$ , i.e., for all  $j < n$  and all policies  $x_j$  with  $\pi_j(x_j) > 0$  and  $x_{j+1}$  with  $\pi_{j+1}(x_{j+1}) > 0$ , we have  $x_j + \varepsilon \leq x_{j+1}$ . It is convenient to represent such a profile by a  $3n$ -tuple  $(x, z, r)$ , where  $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n) \in [0, \bar{x}]^n$ ,  $z = (z_1, \dots, z_n) \in [0, \bar{x}]^n$ , and  $r = (r_1, \dots, r_n) \in [0, 1]^n$ . In addition, we require that for all  $j$ , we have  $x_j \leq z_j$ , and that for all  $j < n$ , we have  $z_j + \varepsilon \leq x_{j+1}$ . We then associate  $(x, z, r)$  with the profile of mixed policy strategies such that the type  $j$  politician places probability  $r_j$  on  $x_j$  and the remaining probability  $1 - r_j$  on  $z_j$ . Letting  $D^\varepsilon$  consist of all such  $3n$ -tuples  $(x, z, r)$ , we see that  $D^\varepsilon$  is nonempty, convex, and compact. Using this representation, we can define (abusing notation slightly) the induced cutoff  $y^*(x, z, r)$ , which is continuous as a function of its arguments.

The second difficulty is that the set  $Y$  of policy outcomes is not compact, so that the voters' cutoff is, in principle, unbounded. To circumvent this problem, we note that by continuity of the function  $y^*(\cdot)$  the image  $y^*(D^\varepsilon)$  is compact, and we

can let  $\bar{Y}$  be a convex, compact set containing this image. The existence proof then proceeds with an application of Kakutani's fixed point theorem. We define the correspondence  $\Phi: D^\varepsilon \times \bar{Y} \rightrightarrows D^\varepsilon \times \bar{Y}$  so that for each  $(x, z, r, \bar{y})$ , the value of  $\Phi$  consists of  $(3n+1)$ -tuples  $(\tilde{x}, \tilde{z}, \tilde{r}, \tilde{y})$  such that for every politician type  $j$ , the policies  $\tilde{x}_j$  and  $\tilde{z}_j$  are optimal and  $\tilde{y}$  is the cutoff induced by the indifference condition:

$$\Phi(x, z, r, \bar{y}) = \left\{ (\tilde{x}, \tilde{z}, \tilde{r}, \tilde{y}) \in D^\varepsilon \times \bar{Y} \mid \begin{array}{l} \text{for all } j, \tilde{x}_j = x_{*,j}(\bar{y}) \text{ and } \tilde{z}_j = x_j^*(\bar{y}) \\ \text{and } \tilde{y} = y^*(x, z, r) \end{array} \right\}.$$

This correspondence is upper hemi-continuous with convex, closed values, and the domain  $D^\varepsilon \times \bar{Y}$  is nonempty, compact, and convex. Therefore, Kakutani's theorem implies that  $\Phi$  has a fixed point,  $(x^*, z^*, r^*, y^*)$ , which yields an electoral equilibrium. Finally, the characterization results in (i)–(iii) follow directly from Propositions 3.4–3.6.

We have not yet touched on the possibility for responsive democracy in the two-period moral hazard model with rent-seeking, where in the present context, we interpret responsive democracy to mean that office holders choose high levels of policy, despite short run incentives to choose their ideal policy. Given the short time horizon (and limited ability of voters to sanction politicians), and given the divergence in preferences between voters and politicians, the prospects for a well-functioning political system may seem dim. Nevertheless, when  $\beta$  is large, so that politicians are substantially office-motivated, we obtain a form of the responsive democracy result. We make use of an additional Inada-type condition: for all  $j$ ,

$$(C5) \quad \lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} w'_j(x) = -\infty.$$

Let  $G = \{j : \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] > V^C\}$  denote the set of above average types, which are such that the expected utility from their ideal policy exceeds the expected utility from a challenger. Let  $\ell = \min G$  be the smallest above average type.

The next result provides a characterization of equilibria when office benefit is high. We find that voters become arbitrarily demanding, in the sense that the equilibrium cutoff diverges to infinity, that the policy choices of all politician types become close to their ideal policy or arbitrarily large, and that all above average types exert unbounded effort. An immediate implication, since type  $n$  is above average and  $p_n > 0$ , is that the voters' expected utility from politicians' choices in the first period increases without bound as office benefit becomes large, i.e.,

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \pi_j(x) \rightarrow \infty.$$

It is possible that some politician type mixes between a policy that is close to the ideal policy and another that becomes arbitrarily large, but because policy choices

are ordered by type, an implication of the proposition is that this can obtain for at most one politician type; choices of lower types will converge to their ideal policies, while choices of higher types will diverge to infinity. Note that the Inada condition (C5) is used only to prove part (iii) of the result.

**Proposition 3.8** *In the two-period model of moral hazard with rent-seeking and moral hazard, assume (C1)–(C5), and let the office benefit  $\beta$  be arbitrarily large. Then for every selection of electoral equilibria  $\sigma$ , the voters' cutoff diverges to infinity; for each politician type  $j$ , the policy choices of all above average types increase without bound; and the greatest policy choice of other types either increases without bound or accumulates at the ideal policy:*

$$(i) \ y^* \rightarrow \infty,$$

$$(ii) \ \text{for all } j, \text{ all } \varepsilon > 0, \text{ and sufficiently large } \beta, \text{ we have } \{x_{*,j}, x_j^*\} \subseteq (\hat{x}_j, \hat{x}_j + \varepsilon) \cup \left(\frac{1}{\varepsilon}, \infty\right),$$

$$(iii) \ x_{\ell-1}^* \rightarrow \infty, \text{ and thus for all } j \geq \ell, \text{ we have } x_{*,j} \rightarrow \infty.$$

To prove the result, let  $\beta$  be large, and let  $\sigma$  be an electoral equilibrium. By Proposition 3.7, each politician type  $j$  mixes between two policies,  $x_j^*$  and  $x_{*,j}$ , and voters use a cutoff  $y^*$ . Suppose there is a subsequence such that  $y^*$  is bounded above, say  $y^* \leq \bar{y}$ . By Proposition 3.7, the equilibrium cutoff lies in the compact set  $[\hat{x}_1, \bar{y}]$ . Then the first order condition for the type 1 politician in (7) implies that  $x_{*,1} \rightarrow \infty$ , and in particular, we have  $\bar{y} < x_{*,1}$  for large enough  $\beta$ , but this contradicts  $x_{*,1} + \hat{z} \leq y^* \leq x_n^* + \hat{z}$ . We conclude that  $y^*$  diverges to infinity, which proves (i).

To prove (ii), suppose there is a type  $j$ , an  $\varepsilon > 0$ , and a subsequence of office benefit levels such that  $\hat{x}_j + \varepsilon \leq x_j^* \leq \frac{1}{\varepsilon}$ . Going to a subsequence, we can assume  $x_j^* \rightarrow \tilde{x}_j$  such that  $\hat{x}_j < \tilde{x}_j < \infty$ . Then for sufficiently large  $\beta$ , we have  $\hat{x}_j < x_j^*$ . For these parameters, the current gain to the type  $j$  politician from choosing  $\hat{x}_j$  instead of  $x_j^*$  is non-positive, and thus we note that

$$(F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*))[w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - V^C] \geq w_j(\hat{x}_j) - w_j(x_j^*).$$

That is, the current gains from choosing the ideal policy are offset by future losses. Since  $y^* \rightarrow \infty$ , the limit of

$$\frac{F(y^* - x_j^*) - F(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1)}{F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*)}$$

as  $\beta$  becomes large is indeterminate, and by L'Hôpital's rule, the limit is equal to

$$\lim \frac{f(y^* - x_j^*) - f(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1)}{f(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - f(y^* - x_j^*)} = \lim \frac{f(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1) \left( \frac{f(y^* - x_j^*)}{f(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1)} - 1 \right)}{f(y^* - x_j^*) \left( \frac{f(y^* - \hat{x}_j)}{f(y^* - x_j^*)} - 1 \right)} = \infty,$$

where we use (C1) and (C2). Then, however, the future gain from choosing  $\tilde{x}_j + 1$  instead of  $x_j^*$  strictly exceeds current losses, i.e.,

$$(F(y^* - x_j^*) - F(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1))[w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - V^C] > w_j(x_j^*) - w_j(\tilde{x}_j + 1), \quad (9)$$

for high enough  $\beta$ . To be specific, let

$$\begin{aligned} A &= w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - V^C \\ B &= w_j(\hat{x}_j) - w_j(x_j^*) \\ C &= w_j(x_j^*) - w_j(\tilde{x}_j + 1), \end{aligned}$$

where  $A$  is evaluated at sufficiently large  $\beta$ . Note that since  $\hat{x}_j < \tilde{x}_j < \infty$ , we have  $\lim B > 0$  and  $\lim C < \infty$ . We have noted that  $(F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*))A \geq B$  for sufficiently large  $\beta$ , and we have shown that as  $\beta$  becomes large, we have

$$\frac{F(y^* - x_j^*) - F(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1)}{F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*)} > \frac{C}{B}.$$

Combining these facts, we have

$$(F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*))A \left( \frac{F(y^* - x_j^*) - F(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1)}{F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*)} \right) > B \left( \frac{C}{B} \right),$$

which yields (35) for large  $\beta$ . This gives the type  $j$  politician a profitable deviation from  $x_j^*$ , a contradiction. A similar argument holds for  $x_{*,j}$ , and (ii) follows.

Finally, to prove (iii), suppose that  $x_{\ell-1}^*$  does not diverge to infinity. By (ii), there is a subsequence such that  $x_{\ell-1}^* \rightarrow \hat{x}_{\ell-1}$ . Now fix politician type  $j \leq \ell - 1$ , and note that since equilibrium policy choices are ordered by type, we have  $x_j^* \rightarrow \hat{x}_j$ . Using the expression for Bayes rule, the posterior probability of type  $j$  conditional on observing  $y^*$  satisfies

$$\mu_T(j|y^*) = \frac{p_j \sum_x f(y^* - x) \pi_j(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(y^* - x) \pi_k(x)} \leq \frac{p_j f(y^* - x_j^*)}{\sum_{k \geq \ell} p_k \sum_x f(y^* - x) \pi_k(x)},$$

where the inequality uses  $y^* \rightarrow \infty$  and single-peakedness of  $f(\cdot)$ . Note that

$$\sum_{k \geq \ell} p_k \sum_x f(y^* - x) \pi_k(x) = \sum_{k \geq \ell} p_k [f(y^* - x_k^*) \pi_k(x_k^*) + f(y^* - x_{*,k}) \pi_k(x_{*,k})].$$

Dividing by  $f(y^* - x_j^*)$ , we obtain the expression

$$\sum_{k \geq \ell} p_k \left[ \frac{f(y^* - x_k^*)}{f(y^* - x_j^*)} \pi_k(x_k^*) + \frac{f(y^* - x_{*,k})}{f(y^* - x_j^*)} \pi_k(x_{*,k}) \right].$$

By the MLRP, we have  $\frac{f(y^* - x_{*,k})}{f(y^* - x_j^*)} \rightarrow \infty$  for all  $k \geq \ell$ . Similarly, if  $x_k^* \rightarrow \hat{x}_k$ , then we have  $\frac{f(y^* - x_k^*)}{f(y^* - x_j^*)} \rightarrow \infty$ . By (ii), the remaining case is  $x_k^* \rightarrow \infty$ . Note that in this case, (C5) implies  $w'_k(x_k^*) \rightarrow -\infty$ , and thus the first order condition in (7) implies that  $f(y^* - x_k^*)\beta \rightarrow \infty$ . The first order condition for type  $j$  implies  $f(y^* - x_j^*)\beta \rightarrow 0$ , and we infer that  $\frac{f(y^* - x_k^*)}{f(y^* - x_j^*)} \rightarrow \infty$ . Thus, we have

$$\mu_T(j|y^*) \leq \frac{p_j}{\sum_{k \geq \ell} p_k \sum_x \frac{f(y^* - x)}{f(y^* - x_j^*)} \pi_k(x)} \rightarrow 0.$$

We conclude that the voters' posterior beliefs conditional on  $y^*$  place probability arbitrarily close to one on above average types  $j \geq \ell$ , contradicting the indifference condition in (8). Therefore, we have  $x_{\ell-1}^* \rightarrow \infty$ , and since policy choices are ordered by type, this implies that  $x_{*,j} \rightarrow \infty$  for all  $j \geq \ell$ . This establishes (iii), as desired.

We formulate the rent-seeking environment so that the policy space  $X = \mathbb{R}_+$  is unbounded above, and this has facilitated the development by removing the possibility of corner solutions and permitting a first order analysis. Of course, given an equilibrium with policy choices  $x_1^*, \dots, x_n^*$ , the equilibrium survives if we modify the model by imposing an upper bound  $\bar{x} \geq x_n^*$  on feasible policies. But imposing such a bound a priori, and independent of the office benefit, creates serious technical difficulties stemming from the possibility that all types pool at the upper bound, which implies that voters do not revise their prior beliefs after observing the outcome  $y$ . Specifically, this difficulty arises when the office benefit is large and office holders have strong incentives to exert higher effort to improve their chances of re-election. The problem is illustrated in Figure 8, where we suppose there are just two types. When the voters' cutoff  $\bar{y}$  is large, the optimal policies of the politicians will be close to their ideal policies. Then the induced cutoff defined by the voters' indifference condition will be roughly the midpoint between the optimal policies. As we decrease the cutoff, the optimal policies increase, and so does the induced cutoff; this relationship is represented by the kinked line in the figure. At some point, the type 2 politicians' optimal policy hits the upper bound  $\bar{x}$ , and it is possible that the type 1 also hits the upper bound *before the induced cutoff crosses the 45° line*. At that point, both types are at a corner solution, and voters

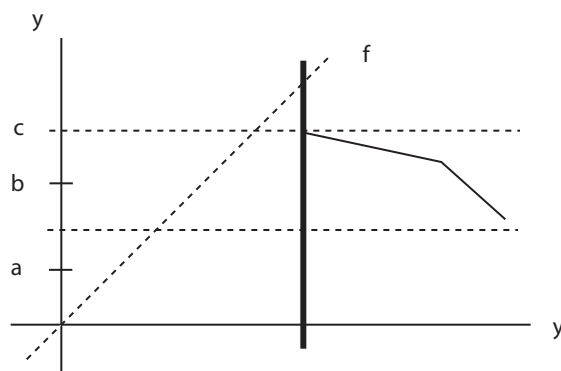


Figure 8: Existence problems with bounded policy

don't update—so the induced cutoff jumps to negative infinity. In this case, mixed voting strategies must be used to ensure existence of equilibrium, forcing us to weaken our equilibrium concept to drop the condition of deferential voting strategies. This in turn creates an indeterminacy in the model, which could be resolved by, e.g., examining the optimal cutoff for voters.<sup>16</sup> We choose to maintain the concept of electoral equilibrium and to allow unbounded policy choices to avoid these difficulties.

The main starting point of our analysis has been the statement of equilibrium existence in Proposition 3.7, which must address challenges due to non-convexities in the payoffs of politicians. This is a problem in previous work too, but one that has been neutralized by different modeling assumptions. The existence problem carries over, in a simplified form, to the symmetric learning environment of Ashworth (2005), who assumes that office benefit is not too large in order to guarantee existence in pure strategies. In the models of Besley (2006), the politician's choice is either explicitly between two possible policies, or it reduces to a finite number of policies, so that equilibria in mixed strategies exist. In the informational setup of Fearon (1999), voters observe a stochastic level  $u(x) + \varepsilon$  of utility, rather than a noisy policy outcome  $y = x + \varepsilon$ , allowing him to solve first order conditions explicitly and to verify second order conditions. In contrast, we assume that voters observe a policy outcome  $y$  drawn from the conditional density  $f(\cdot|x)$  and that they accrue utility  $u(y)$  from that outcome; we allow politicians to choose from a continuum of possible policies; and we capture arbitrarily large office benefits by allowing politicians to mix but imposing (C4) to limit mixing to at most two policy

<sup>16</sup>We adopt this approach in the analysis of the infinite-horizon model of pure moral hazard in Subsection 6.1.

choices.

## 4 Dynamic framework

We now imbed the electoral model in an infinite-horizon dynamic setting such that in each period  $t = 1, 2, \dots$ , an incumbent politician makes a policy choice  $x_t$ , this choice determines a publicly observed policy outcome  $y_t$ , a challenger is randomly drawn, and an election is held. Consistent with the citizen-candidate approach, we assume that the incumbent's choice is unrestricted and that the challenger cannot make binding campaign promises, and we therefore suppress political campaigns. Voters do not directly observe the type of the incumbent or challenger, but rather they update their beliefs about the incumbent on the basis of observed policy outcomes. Thus, the framework is the direct extension of the two-period model summarized in Figure 3, with the fundamental difference that there is no longer a last period.

As in the two-period model, there is a nonempty, convex action set  $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}$  and a continuum  $N$  of citizens who are partitioned into a finite set of types  $T = \{1, \dots, n\}$ ,  $n \geq 2$ . In period 1, a politician is randomly drawn from the population of citizens, with each type  $j$  having probability  $p_j$ , the politician makes policy choice  $x_1 \in X$ , and voters observe policy outcome  $y_1$ . Every period  $t$  thereafter, timing is as follows:

- the winner of the period  $t - 1$  election, the incumbent, chooses policy  $x_t \in X$ ,
- voters observe policy outcome  $y_t$  drawn from the distribution  $F(\cdot|x_t)$ ,
- a challenger is drawn from the electorate with each type  $j$  having probability  $p_j$ , and an election is held,
- and we move to period  $t + 1$  and repeat the above process.

Furthermore, we assume that challengers are drawn without replacement (so that once rejected, a politician does not run for office again) and independently from previous candidates. If an incumbent first assumes office in period  $t$  and is in term  $\ell$ , then we refer to policy outcomes  $\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1} = (y_t, y_{t+1}, \dots, y_{t+\ell-1})$  generated by her choices as the politician's *personal history*. We let  $\mathbf{y}^0$  be the "empty" history indicating a newly elected politician. In the following sections, we consider two specifications of the outcome distribution. First, we let  $F(\cdot|x_t)$  be degenerate on  $y_t = x_t$ , so that politicians choose policy directly and these choices are observable; second, we let the distribution be continuous with full support, so that monitoring is imperfect.

Type  $j$  citizens receive payoff  $u_j(y_t)$  from policy  $y_t$  in period  $t$  if they are not in office and a payoff of  $w_j(x_t) + \beta$  in period  $t$  if they hold office. Citizens have a common rate of time discounting, which is represented by the discount factor  $\delta \in [0, 1)$ . Given a sequence  $x_1, x_2, \dots$  of actions and a sequence  $y_1, y_2, \dots$  of policies, the total payoff of a type  $j$  citizen is the discounted sum of per period payoffs,

$$\sum_{t=1}^{\infty} \delta^{t-1} [I_t(w_j(x_t) + \beta) + (1 - I_t)u_j(y_t)],$$

where  $I_t \in \{0, 1\}$  is an indicator variable that takes a value of one if the citizen holds office in period  $t$  and takes a value of zero otherwise.

We continue to focus on the *spatial preferences* environment in the context of pure adverse selection, i.e., perfect monitoring, and we focus on the *rent-seeking* environment in the presence of moral hazard, i.e., imperfect monitoring. Strategies are now potentially highly complex, as policy choices and votes could conceivably depend arbitrarily on observed histories of policy and electoral outcomes. To reduce the multiplicity of perfect Bayesian equilibria of the model, we must impose refinements that strengthen sequential rationality and Bayesian updating to preclude implausible behavior by voters and politicians. We extend the concept of electoral equilibrium from the two-period model to “stationary electoral equilibria” of the infinite-horizon model. These equilibria appear simple enough to be behaviorally plausible, and the refinement adequately reduces the equilibrium set to produce predictive power and permit comparative statics; and they can often be characterized by a finite system of equations, facilitating numerical computation. Importantly, the concept of stationary electoral equilibrium synthesizes many approaches taken in the existing literature on dynamic elections.

In contrast to the two-period model, which features a single election, strategies must at a minimum now be conditioned on information generated by the incumbent politician’s past choices in office, which may reveal relevant information to voters. A *strategy for a type  $j$  politician* is a sequence  $(\pi_j^\ell)_{\ell=1}^{\infty}$ , where  $\pi_j^\ell$  specifies the politician’s mixture over policy choices in term  $\ell$  of office as a function of personal history; we write  $\pi_j^\ell(\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1}) \in \Delta(X)$  for the mixture over policy choices in term  $\ell$  given personal history  $\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1}$  over the first  $\ell - 1$  terms of office, so that that the type  $j$  politician’s policy choice in term  $\ell$  after policy outcomes  $\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1} = (y_1, \dots, y_{\ell-1})$  is realized from the distribution  $\pi_j^\ell(\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1})$ . We write  $\pi_j^\ell(Z|\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1})$  for the probability that a type  $j$  politician chooses a policy in the (measurable) set  $Z$ , and for tractability, we assume  $\pi_j^\ell(\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1})$  has finite support. An alternative interpretation, which we adopt in the analysis of elections with perfect monitoring, is that  $\pi_j^\ell(Z|\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1})$  is the *proportion* of type  $j$  politicians who choose a policy in the set  $Z$ ; then we understand that each politician uses a pure strategy, but we allow politicians of the same



type to choose different policies. A *strategy for a type  $j$  voter* is a vector  $(\rho_j^\ell)_{\ell=1}^\infty$ , where  $\rho^\ell(\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1}, y_{t+\ell}) \in \{0, 1\}$  determines the vote of the voter as a function of the personal history  $\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1}$  of the incumbent in prior terms of office and the current policy outcome  $y_{t+\ell}$ . And a *belief system* is a sequence  $(\mu^\ell)_{\ell=1}^\infty$ , where  $\mu^\ell(\cdot | \mathbf{y}^{\ell-1}, y_{t+\ell})$  is a probability distribution on  $T \times X$  as a function of the personal history of the incumbent and current policy outcome. If the incumbent is re-elected, then the marginal of this distribution on  $T$  determines the voters' *updated prior belief* regarding the incumbent's type at the beginning of the next period. We omit notation for more complex strategies in which citizens condition on histories of previous office holders, as they seem less compelling on behavioral grounds.

A strategy profile  $\sigma = ((\pi_j^\ell)_{\ell=1}^\infty, (\rho_j)_{\ell=1}^\infty)_{j \in T}$  is *sequentially rational* given belief system  $\mu$  if for every term of office  $\ell$  and every personal history  $\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1}$ , no politician can gain by deviating to a different policy choice, and for all policy outcomes  $y_{t+\ell}$ , voters of each type vote for the candidate that offers the highest expected discounted payoff conditional on her information; and beliefs  $\mu$  are *consistent* with  $\sigma$  if for every term of office  $\ell$  and every personal history  $\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1}$  and outcome  $y_{t+\ell}$  on the path of play,  $\mu^\ell(j, x | \mathbf{y}^{\ell-1}, y_{t+\ell})$  is derived using Bayes rule.<sup>17</sup> A *perfect Bayesian equilibrium* is a pair  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  such that  $\sigma$  is sequentially rational given  $\mu$  and such that  $\mu$  is consistent with  $\sigma$ .

We focus on pairs  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  that are *stationary*, in the sense that (i) the choices of a politician depend only on her type and the voters' updated prior beliefs at the beginning of the current period, (ii) votes of voters depend only on the updated priors and the current policy outcome, (iii) the belief system depends on personal history only through the voters' updated priors and the current policy outcome, and (iv) these functional relationships are constant over time. This implies that the continuation value of a challenger  $V_j^C(\psi)$  for a type  $j$  voter is constant over time, but it implies more. Consider a type  $j$  politician with personal history  $\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1}$  such that the voters' updated prior beliefs are  $b$ , and consider another type  $j$  politician with personal history  $\tilde{\mathbf{y}}^{\ell-1}$  leading to the same updated prior beliefs  $b$ . An action  $x$  by either politician leads to the same distribution of policy outcomes on which voters condition their posterior beliefs; and in either scenario, if a policy outcome  $y$  on the path of play is observed, then Bayesian updating leads to the same posterior beliefs about the incumbent's type. Thus, the situations faced by the politicians with the same updated prior are strategically isomorphic, as are the situations of voters with the same updated prior and observed policy outcome, and we assume that the behavior of citizens reflects this isomorphism.

We let  $b \in \Delta(T)$  denote the prior beliefs of the voters at the beginning of a pe-

<sup>17</sup>Recall that we only consider equilibria in which the mixtures  $\pi_j^\ell(\mathbf{y}^{\ell-1})$  have finite support, so that Bayesian updating is well-defined.

riod, and given stationary strategy profile  $\sigma$ , we abuse notation slightly by writing  $\pi_j(b)$  for the mixture over actions of a type  $j$  politician given updated priors  $b$  (alternatively,  $\pi_j(Z|b)$  is the fraction of type  $j$  politicians who choose a policy in  $Z$  given beliefs  $b$ ); we write  $\rho_j(b, y)$  for the vote of a type  $j$  voter with prior  $b$  after observing policy outcome  $y$ ; and we write  $\mu(b, y)$  for the updated beliefs conditional on observing  $y$  given prior beliefs  $b$ . We henceforth write  $V_j^I(b|\psi)$  for the expected discounted payoff of a type  $j$  voter from re-electing an incumbent given updated prior beliefs  $b$ , and (again abusing notation) we write  $V_j^I(b, y|\psi) = V_j^I(\mu_T(b, y)|\psi)$  for the expected discounted payoff from the incumbent given prior  $b$  and observed outcome  $y$ .

A pair  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  is *deferential* if voters favor the incumbent when indifferent, or more formally, given any beliefs  $b$  and policy outcome  $y$  on the path of play, a type  $j$  voter votes for the incumbent if and only if  $V_j^I(b, y|\psi) \geq V_j^C(\psi)$ . As in the dynamic Hotelling-Downs model of Subsection 2.4, these continuation values can be written as expected utilities with respect to two lotteries,  $L$  and  $L'$ , over policies, and it follows that the median type  $m$  is pivotal in the election; thus, the incumbent wins if and only if  $V_m^I(b, y|\psi) \geq V_m^C(\psi)$ . We say  $\psi$  is *monotonic* if for all voter types  $j$  and all updated priors  $b$ , there is some utility cutoff  $\underline{u}_j(b)$  such that for all policy outcomes  $y$ , the type  $j$  voters vote to re-elect the incumbent if and only if the utility from  $y$  meets or exceeds that cutoff, i.e.,

$$\rho_j(b, y) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } u_j(y) \geq \underline{u}_j(b), \\ 0 & \text{else.} \end{cases}$$

Using decisiveness of the median voter, we can define the *acceptance set* of policy outcomes that lead to re-election given updated prior  $b$  as

$$A(b|\psi) = \{y \in Y : V_m^I(b, y|\psi) \geq V_m^C(\psi)\},$$

and by monotonicity, this will be a closed, convex subset.

Our main equilibrium concept for the infinite-horizon model is defined as follows: we say  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  is a *stationary electoral equilibrium* if it is a perfect Bayesian equilibrium that is stationary, deferential, and monotonic.<sup>18</sup> We emphasize that this is a refinement of perfect Bayesian equilibrium, so that after all histories, no citizen can increase her expected discounted payoff by deviating to another strategy (stationary or non-stationary). And although we allow in principle for behavior as a general function of updated priors, the restrictions we impose capture some intuitive ideas. The assumption of deferential strategies is a form of *prospective voting*, in which a voter casts her vote as though pivotal in the election, and the

<sup>18</sup>We also consider a further refinement of “simple electoral equilibrium” in the perfect monitoring case.

assumption of monotonicity formalizes *retrospective voting*, in which a voter asks, “What have you done for me lately?” and votes to re-elect the incumbent if the policy outcome delivered by the politician satisfies a certain threshold. Thus, in a stationary electoral equilibrium, prospective and retrospective voting are compatible and both describe the behavior of voters, and the choices of office holders are optimal given these voting strategies. Note that although our equilibrium concept is stationary with respect to voters’ beliefs about the incumbent’s type, stationary electoral equilibria allow non-trivial dynamics, for once an incumbent is re-elected and voters update their beliefs, it is possible that the voters’ acceptance set and the politicians’ optimal policy choices change; and if the incumbent is again re-elected, then updating may continue and play may continue to evolve.

In the development of stationary electoral equilibrium, we noted that the median voter type is always pivotal in the sense that the incumbent wins if and only if the expected discounted payoff from re-electing her weakly exceeds that from electing a challenger. The following *representative voter theorem for dynamic elections* records this observation formally and is used throughout the subsequent analysis.

**Proposition 4.1** *In the infinite-horizon electoral model with spatial preferences, if  $\Psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  is a stationary electoral equilibrium, then the median voter type is a representative voter, i.e., the incumbent wins if and only if  $V_m^I(b, y|\Psi) \geq V_m^C(\Psi)$ .*

Before proceeding to impose specific informational assumptions on the model, we note a useful and general principle that unpacks the logical implications of the representative voter theorem. Formally, we simply assume that each voter casts her ballot as though pivotal in an election, calculating the expected discounted payoffs from the incumbent and challenger in a sophisticated way but voting sincerely. The representative voter result in Proposition 4.1 shows that the median voter type actually is pivotal in elections, i.e., that the calculations of a majority of voters will always agree with the median voter type. In this sense, the median voter type is “representative,” but only in a passive way: the result is that given future behavior of politicians *and voters*, the median voter type prefers one candidate to another if and only if a majority of voters do. This is distinct from the assumption that there is a single, unitary voter, for in that case, the unitary voter should not take as given her own future behavior and optimize only between the current candidates; rather, a unitary voter would rationally optimize over all (possibly non-stationary) voting plans as a function of histories. In other words, a unitary voter faces an *optimal retention problem* with value function

$$\bar{V}(b) = \max_{v \in [0,1]} v \sum_j b_j \sum_x \left[ \int_y [u_m(y) + \delta \bar{V}(\mu_T(x|b, y))] F(dy|x) \right] \pi_j(x|b) + (1-v) \bar{V}(p),$$

where the maximization is with respect to the probability  $v$  of retaining the incumbent given the voter's beliefs  $b$  after observing the outcome of the incumbent's policy choice. Here,  $\bar{V}(b)$  is the optimum value of electing a politician given the voter's beliefs  $b$  about the politician's type. We use the fact that the problem is stationary with respect to the voter's beliefs about the incumbent's type, so that without loss of generality, we can write this value as a function of the voter's beliefs alone.

The next result states an *optimality principle for dynamic elections*, which carries over the insight from Bellman's optimality principle for dynamic programming to the electoral framework. It is well-known that in a standard dynamic programming problem, a sufficient condition for a plan to be optimal is that in every state—given the choices determined by the plan in the future—the choice dictated at the current state maximizes the expected discounted payoff of the decision maker. We apply this insight to the electoral model as follows: the outcome of each election is the median voter's preferred choice, and the median voter calculates the expected discounted payoffs from the incumbent and challenger taking her future choices as given; therefore, the choices determined by her equilibrium voting strategy constitute an optimal plan in the hypothetical optimal retention problem. That is, the median voter is passive in our framework and does not assume she can control future electoral outcomes, but *even if the median voter could control the outcomes of future elections*, her expected discounted payoff would not increase above its equilibrium level. This observation is made by Duggan and Forand (2014) in a related model of dynamic elections with complete information and an evolving state variable.

**Proposition 4.2** *In the infinite-horizon electoral model with spatial preferences, if  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  is a stationary electoral equilibrium, then the voting strategy  $\rho_m$  of the median voter type solves the optimal retention problem in the associated model with a unitary voter.*

Finally, we follow our observation for the two-period model by noting a straightforward *anti-folk theorem* for the infinite-horizon model in which voters observe the type of the incumbent. We modify the above framework so that voters observe the type of a politician once she takes office, and we consider subgame perfect equilibria that are deferential and stationary in the sense that voters and politicians do not condition on actions prior to the current period.

**Proposition 4.3** *In the infinite-horizon electoral model in which voters observe the incumbent's type, every deferential, stationary subgame perfect equilibrium is such that office holders always choose their ideal policies.*

Indeed, given such an equilibrium, we can write the expected discounted utility of the median voter from a type  $j$  incumbent as  $V_m^j$  and from an unknown challenger as  $V_m^C$ ; importantly, by stationarity, the expected payoff  $V_m^j$  from the incumbent is a constant and does not depend on the history of play. In a deferential equilibrium, the median voter votes to re-elect the incumbent if and only if  $V_m^j \geq V_m^C$ , and so  $\rho_m$  is constant. Then the type  $j$  office holder solves

$$\max_{x \in X} w_j(x) + \beta + \delta \left[ \rho_m [w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta] + (1 - \rho_m) V_m^C \right],$$

which obviously has the unique solution  $x = \hat{x}^j$ . As we saw in the two-period model of Subsection 3.3, the absence of uncertainty about the incumbent's type removes all reputational concerns of the politician, electoral incentives lose all disciplining power, and the only possible equilibrium behavior replicates myopic play. This observation holds regardless of whether actions are perfectly observed and regardless of the preference environment.

## 5 Pure adverse selection

In this section, we consider the dynamic elections framework with spatial preferences and perfect monitoring. The seminal paper studying political accountability in an infinite horizon model with perfect monitoring is Barro (1973). As opposed to Barro, we consider spatial preferences rather than rent-seeking; more importantly, and consistent with the emphasis on reputation incentives, we consider several types of politicians, so that we present a model of adverse selection. Throughout this section, we assume that the policy choice  $x$  of an office holder determines the policy outcome  $y = x$  with no noise, or in the terminology of the previous section, that the distribution  $F(\cdot|x)$  over policies given policy choice  $x$  puts probability one on  $x$ . Thus, we drop the distinction between policy choices and outcomes, and we assume voter preferences are defined over  $x$  directly. A symmetric version of this model in which types are continuously distributed is investigated by Duggan (2000), and Bernhardt, Dubey, and Hughson (2004) consider the model with an arbitrary finite term limit. Banks and Duggan (2008) provide theorems on existence of a class of simple equilibria in the multidimensional model, and they give conditions on the one-dimensional model under which equilibrium policies converge to the median voter's ideal policy.

We begin with the analysis of existence and uniqueness of a special class of "simple electoral equilibria," in which updating occurs once when an incumbent is initially re-elected but then ceases: the acceptance set is fixed through time and the optimal policy of the office holder remains unchanged. We then show that such

equilibria have the partitioned form familiar from Subsection 3.3, and we establish a *strong form of responsive democracy* in the model without term limits: if either citizens are sufficiently patient or the office benefit is sufficiently high, then in equilibrium, all politician types always choose the median policy. This result does not carry over to the model with a two-period term limit, however, as the *commitment problem of voters* curtails the electoral incentives of politicians. We end the section with a discussion of several extensions of the model to allow for more realistic assumptions on partisanship, voter preferences, and political campaigns.

### 5.1 Existence of simple equilibria

The literature has focussed on a particularly simple form of equilibrium, such that along the personal path of play of a politician, voters update after the first term of office but do not update after subsequent terms of the politician: the acceptance set remains unchanged when an incumbent is re-elected, and politicians always choose the same policy while in office. In such an equilibrium, for all beliefs  $b \in \Delta(T)$  and all acceptable policies  $x \in A(b|\psi)$ , we have

$$A(\mu_T(b, x)|\psi) = A(b|\psi),$$

i.e., after an acceptable policy is chosen and voters update beliefs, the acceptance set remains unchanged. In a politician's first term, the acceptance set in such an equilibrium is  $A(p|\psi)$ , where the voters' beliefs are given by the prior  $p$ . If the politician is type  $j$  and her ideal policy  $\hat{x}_j$  belongs to the acceptance set  $A(p|\psi)$ , then she can secure re-election by choosing  $\hat{x}_j$ , and since the acceptance set remains the same, she can continue to choose her ideal policy and gain re-election in every period. Such a politician type is a "winner," and their optimization problem is trivial. Otherwise, if the politician's ideal policy does not belong to the acceptance set, then the office holder faces a trade off: either (i) shirk by choosing her ideal policy  $\hat{x}_j$  today, foregoing re-election, or (ii) compromise by choosing a policy that is in the acceptance set, though not ideal, in order to gain re-election. Thus, the optimization problem is

$$\max_{x \in X} \left\{ u_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \delta V_j^C(\psi), \max_{x \in A(p|\psi)} \frac{u_j(x) + \beta}{1 - \delta} \right\}. \quad (10)$$

Since  $A(p|\psi)$  is a closed interval and  $u_j$  is strictly quasi-concave, this means that if the politician's ideal policy does not belong to the acceptance set, then she either shirks or chooses the endpoint of  $A(p|\psi)$  closest to her ideal policy.

From the perspective of voters, because the median is a representative voter, we know  $A(p|\psi)$  consists of every policy  $x$  such that  $V_m^I(p, x|\psi) \geq V_m^C(\psi)$ . And since

an incumbent who is re-elected continues to choose the same policy, this means that

$$A(p|\Psi) \subseteq \left\{ x \in X : \frac{u_m(x)}{1-\delta} \geq V_m^C(\Psi) \right\},$$

so a policy can be acceptable to the median voter only if the utility from that policy is at least equal to the continuation value of a challenger. The maximally permissive acceptance set that is consistent with this criterion is

$$A(p|\Psi) = \left\{ x \in X : \frac{u_m(x)}{1-\delta} \geq V_m^C(\Psi) \right\}, \quad (11)$$

so that a policy choice gains re-election if and only if the median voter weakly prefers that policy to a challenger. Note that the above acceptance set is independent of the voters' beliefs  $p$ , and so the acceptance set under the maximally permissive criterion is constant, and we write it simply as  $A(\Psi)$ . If a stationary electoral equilibrium  $\Psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  is such that all type  $j$  politicians solve (10) and acceptance sets satisfy (11), then we say it is a *simple electoral equilibrium*.

Banks and Duggan (2008) establish existence of equilibria in this class.

**Proposition 5.1** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection of pure adverse selection, there exists a simple electoral equilibrium.*

Details of the proof are omitted, but we note that it relies on a structural similarity with infinite-horizon bargaining models based on the protocol of Baron and Ferejohn (1989); in particular, it follows along the lines of the existence proof in the spatial version of the model due to Banks and Duggan (2000). To provide some insight into the parallels, an office holder's choice of policy in the electoral model is similar to a proposer making a proposal in the bargaining model; the election is similar to a vote over the proposal; and the random draw of a challenger is similar to the random selection of a new proposer. The main difference between the two frameworks is that in the electoral model, the policy "proposed" by an office holder goes into effect for one period before it is voted on; if the proposal passes (i.e., the politician is re-elected), then it remains in place forever, and if it fails, then a new politician makes a policy choice in the next period.

The above proposition does not address the question of uniqueness of equilibrium, which is proved in symmetric models with continuous types by Duggan (2000) and Bernhardt, Campuzano, Squintaini, and Camara (2009). An analogue is available in a symmetric version of the current framework, but it relies on our maintained assumption that a challenger is the median type with positive probability, i.e.,  $p_m > 0$ . When this assumption is violated, it is easy to obtain multiple equilibria. In Figure 9, for example, we assume there are three types,  $T = \{1, 2, 3\}$ ,

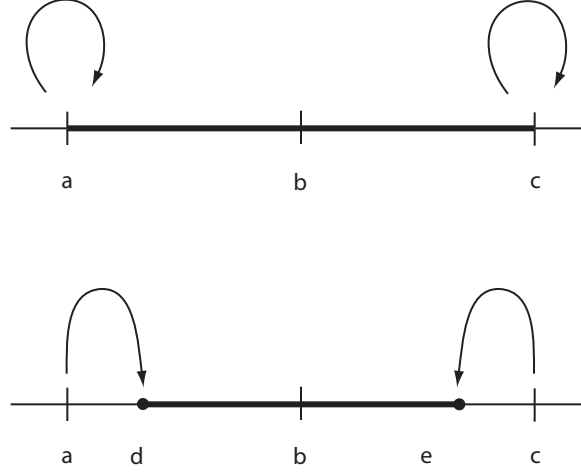


Figure 9: Multiple equilibria

where the median voter type is  $m = 2$  but challengers are drawn from the extreme types with equal probability, i.e.,  $p_1 = p_3 = \frac{1}{2}$ . Assuming quadratic utility and placing the extreme types at equal distance from the median, it is trivially a simple electoral equilibrium for all politicians to choose their ideal policies in every period and for voters to re-elect an incumbent following any choice in the interval  $[\hat{x}_1, \hat{x}_3]$  of ideal points. Adding the assumption that  $\delta > 0$ , we can modify these strategies for small  $\varepsilon > 0$  so that the extreme types compromise by choosing  $\hat{x}_1 + \varepsilon$  and  $\hat{x}_3 - \varepsilon$ , and voters re-elect following any choice in the interval  $[\hat{x}_1 + \varepsilon, \hat{x}_3 - \varepsilon]$ . In particular, since the discount factor is positive and  $\varepsilon$  is small, each politician prefers to compromise rather than shirk. Varying  $\varepsilon$ , we then obtain a continuum of non-payoff equivalent equilibria.

## 5.2 Partitional characterization

The simple electoral equilibria established in Proposition 5.1 involve a separation of politician types that has the partitional structure familiar from Proposition 3.2 in the two-period model. Given a simple electoral equilibrium  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  with acceptance set  $A(\psi)$ , let

$$\begin{aligned}
 W &= \{j \in T : \hat{x}_j \in A(\psi)\}, \\
 C &= \left\{ j \in T \setminus W : \frac{1}{1-\delta} \max_{x \in A(\psi)} \{u_j(x) + \beta\} \geq u_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \delta V_j^C(\psi) \right\}, \\
 L &= T \setminus (W \cup C).
 \end{aligned}$$



Note that the expected discounted payoff to a politician type  $j \in C$  from choosing the best acceptable policy in the current and all future terms of office is just

$$\frac{1}{1-\delta} \max_{x \in A(\psi)} u_j(x) + \beta,$$

while the expected discounted payoff from shirking by choosing the ideal policy  $\hat{x}_j$  and foregoing re-election is

$$u_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \delta V_j^C(\psi),$$

so such politicians weakly prefer to compromise to retain office. In contrast, types  $j \in L$  strictly prefer to shirk at the cost of losing the election. Thus, we refer to politicians in these sets, respectively, as “winners,” “compromisers,” and “losers.” Let  $\ell = \min W$  and  $r = \max W$  denote the smallest and largest winning types, respectively.

Clearly, the winning types have centrally located ideal policies in the interval  $A(\psi)$  around the median voter’s ideal policy. Intuitively, a politician whose ideal policy is outside but close to the acceptance set should also compromise, as the cost of doing so is small. The cost of compromise may be prohibitive for some extreme types, which are thus losing, but it is possible in principle that even more extreme types may have incentives to compromise in order to avoid electing a challenger who chooses policy at the opposite extreme of the policy space. Such types have more to lose than moderate politicians by inserting a challenger in office. The next proposition establishes that under our assumptions, this phenomenon does not arise in equilibrium, and that the set of compromising types consists of two “connected” sets on either side of the acceptance set. Note that it is possible that the compromise set is empty.

**Proposition 5.2** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure adverse selection, let  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  be a simple electoral equilibrium. Then there exist integers  $k'$  and  $k''$  such that  $k' \leq \ell \leq m \leq r \leq k''$  and*

$$\begin{aligned} W &= \{\ell, \ell + 1, \dots, r - 1, r\} \\ C &= \{k', \dots, \ell - 1\} \cup \{r + 1, \dots, k''\}. \end{aligned}$$

We must argue that for a simple electoral equilibrium  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$ , the compromise set has the form above. It suffices to show, letting  $k''$  be the highest compromising type, that the compromise set contains all types  $j$  with  $r < j < k''$ . Let  $A(p|\psi) = [x', x'']$ . As in Subsection 2.4, we can write the normalized expected discounted payoff from electing a challenger for a type  $j$  voter as the expected payoff

from a lottery  $L$  on  $X$ , so that

$$(1 - \delta)V_j^C(\boldsymbol{\psi}) = \mathbb{E}_L[u_j(x)] = \sum_x L(x)u_j(x).$$

For a general value  $\theta > \theta_m$ , we can use compactness of  $X$  and strict concavity of  $u(x|\theta) = \theta v(x) - c(x)$  in  $x$  to define the unique ideal policy

$$\hat{x}(\theta) = \arg \max_{x \in X} u(x|\theta).$$

A hypothetical politician with parameter  $\theta$  is then willing to compromise at  $x'$  if and only if

$$\frac{1}{1 - \delta} \left( u(x'|\theta) + \beta \right) \geq u(\hat{x}(\theta)|\theta) + \beta + \frac{\delta}{1 - \delta} \mathbb{E}_L[u_j(x)],$$

or equivalently,

$$\delta \left( \beta + \sum_x L(x)c(x) \right) - c(x') \geq (1 - \delta)u(\hat{x}(\theta)|\theta) - \theta \left( v(x') - \delta \sum_x L(x)v(x) \right). \quad (12)$$

Noting that the left-hand side of (12) is constant in  $\theta$ , the envelope theorem implies that the first derivative of the right-hand side with respect to  $\theta$  is

$$(1 - \delta)v(\hat{x}(\theta)) - v(x') + \delta \sum_x L(x)v(x).$$

Since  $\hat{x}(\theta)$  is increasing in  $\theta$  and  $v$  is increasing, this derivative is increasing in  $\theta$ , and it follows that the right-hand side of (12) is convex in  $\theta$ . Clearly, the inequality holds when  $\theta = \theta_m$  and  $\theta = \theta_{k''}$ , and thus it holds for all types  $j$  with  $\theta_m < \theta_j < \theta_{k''}$ ; see Figure 10. Thus, the compromising types  $j > m$  form a connected set  $\{r + 1, \dots, k''\}$ , and a symmetric argument addresses compromising types less than the median type.

The above proposition delivers a partitioning of types similar to that of Figure 4, above. A difference between the current equilibrium analysis and the backward induction construction of Subsection 3.3 is that now mixed policy strategies are needed to ensure existence; in particular, it is necessary to allow some types of politician to mix between compromising and shirking. The single-crossing argument for Proposition 5.2 implies, however, that the need for mixing is limited: in a simple electoral equilibrium, there is at most one type on each side of the median voter that mixes. This is seen immediately from the indifference condition

$$v(x') - \delta \sum_x L(x)v(x) + \beta = (1 - \delta)u(\hat{x}(\theta)|\theta) + \theta \delta \sum_x L(x)(c(x') - c(x)),$$

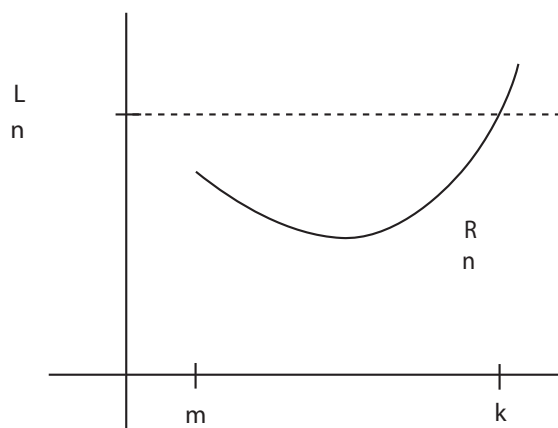


Figure 10: Single crossing for compromisers

which is satisfied by at most one  $\theta > \theta_m$ . If there is no type  $j$  such that  $\theta_j = \theta$ , then there is no politician type  $j < m$  that mixes in the first term of office; otherwise, there may be exactly one type to the left of the median that mixes, and similarly to the right; see Figure 11, where types  $k' = 2$  and  $k'' = 5$  mix in equilibrium.

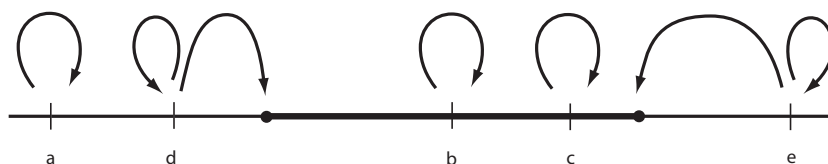


Figure 11: Partitional structure

The preceding observation implies that a simple electoral equilibrium can be characterized as a solution to a system of equations; in fact, equilibria may solve any of a finite number of systems of equations, depending on the cutoff types  $k', \ell, r, k''$ . The system corresponding to a set of cutoffs involves nine equations in nine unknowns,  $\pi', \pi'', \xi', \xi'', \alpha', \alpha'', V, V', V''$ , where:  $\pi', \pi'' \in [0, 1]$  represent the probability of compromise by types  $k'$  and  $k''$ ,  $\xi' \in [\underline{x}, \hat{x}_m]$  and  $\xi'' \in [\hat{x}_m, \bar{x}]$  are the endpoints of the acceptance set,  $\alpha', \alpha'' \geq 0$  are the net normalized discounted payoffs from compromising over shirking for types  $k'$  and  $k''$ , and  $V, V', V''$  are the normalized continuation values of a challenger for the median voter and the type  $k'$

and  $k''$  voters. For the case in which  $k'$  and  $k''$  are indifferent between compromise and shirking, the first seven equations are

$$V = u_m(\xi') \quad (13)$$

$$V = u_m(\xi'') \quad (14)$$

$$\alpha' = u_{k'}(\xi') + \beta - (1 - \delta)(u_{k'}(\hat{x}_{k'}) + \beta) - \delta V' \quad (15)$$

$$\alpha'' = u_{k''}(\xi'') + \beta - (1 - \delta)(u_{k''}(\hat{x}_{k''}) + \beta) - \delta V'' \quad (16)$$

$$0 = (1 - \pi')\alpha' \quad (17)$$

$$0 = (1 - \pi'')\alpha'' \quad (18)$$

$$\begin{aligned} V = & \sum_{j=1}^{k'-1} p_j [(1 - \delta)u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \delta V] \\ & + p_{k'} [\pi' u_m(\xi') + (1 - \pi')((1 - \delta)u_m(\hat{x}_{k'}) + \delta V)] \\ & + \sum_{j=k'+1}^{\ell-1} p_j u_m(\xi') + \sum_{j=\ell}^r u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \sum_{j=r+1}^{k''-1} p_j u_m(\xi'') \\ & + p_{k''} [\pi'' u_m(\xi'') + (1 - \pi'')((1 - \delta)u_m(\hat{x}_{k''}) + \delta V)] \\ & + \sum_{j=k''+1}^n p_j [(1 - \delta)u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \delta V], \end{aligned} \quad (19)$$

with equations for  $V'$  and  $V''$  defined analogously. Here, (13) and (14) are indifference conditions for the median voter; (15) and (16) give the net advantage of compromise for types  $k'$  and  $k''$ ; (17) and (18) allow mixing between compromise and shirking by  $k'$  and  $k''$  when indifferent; and (19) gives the continuation value of a challenger for the median voter. This characterization, while notationally complex, implies that the model is computationally tractable, as the unique simple electoral equilibrium can be found as the solution to a relatively small system of equations.

### 5.3 Responsive democracy

To further characterize stationary electoral equilibria, we first note that in any such equilibrium  $(\sigma, \mu)$ , given any beliefs  $b$  and acceptable policy  $x$ , the acceptance set following the choice of  $x$  and updating by voters is nonempty.

**Proposition 5.3** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure adverse selection, let  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  be a stationary electoral equilibrium. Then for all  $b \in \Delta(T)$  and all  $x \in A(b|\psi)$ , we have  $A(\mu_T(b, x)|\psi) \neq \emptyset$ .*

Let  $b' = \mu_T(b, x)$  denote the voters' beliefs given prior  $b$  and observed policy  $x \in A(b|\psi)$ . If  $A(b'|\psi) = \emptyset$ , then each type  $j$  with  $b'_j > 0$  chooses her ideal policy

$\hat{x}_j$ . Then each type is revealed to voters, and we have

$$V_m^I(b, x|\Psi) = \sum_j \rho_j [u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \delta V_m^C(\Psi)] \geq V_m^C(\Psi),$$

where the inequality follows because  $x$  is acceptable. This implies that for some type  $k$ , we have  $u_m(\hat{x}_k) \geq (1 - \delta)V_m^C(\Psi)$ . Conditional on observing  $\hat{x}_k$ , voters update that the politician is type  $k$  with probability one. If the incumbent is re-elected, then she either chooses her ideal policy and is replaced, or she chooses an acceptable policy, and so the expected payoff to the median voter from re-electing the politician satisfies

$$V_m^I(b', \hat{x}_k|\Psi) \geq \min\{u_m(\hat{x}_k) + \delta V_m^C(\Psi), V_m^C(\Psi)\} \geq V_m^C(\Psi).$$

Since  $(\sigma, \mu)$  is deferential, we conclude that  $\hat{x}_k \in A(b'|\Psi)$ , a contradiction.

The previous proposition assumes existence of an acceptable policy, but it is clear that the acceptance set is nonempty in an office holder's first term, when the voters' beliefs are given by the prior. Indeed, suppose otherwise. Then all politician types choose their ideal policies in equilibrium, and in particular, the median type  $m$  politician chooses  $\hat{x}_m$  and reveals her type. If the median voter re-elects the type  $m$  incumbent, then the politician either shirks by choosing the median policy or chooses an acceptable policy, and in both cases the expected discounted payoff to the median voter is at least that of electing a challenger. Thus, the incumbent is re-elected, and we conclude that  $\hat{x}_m$  is acceptable, a contradiction. We have argued for the following result.

**Proposition 5.4** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure adverse selection, let  $\Psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  be a stationary electoral equilibrium. Then  $A(p|\Psi) \neq \emptyset$ .*

An implication of Propositions 5.3 and 5.4 is that the type  $m$  politician always chooses the median ideal policy in her first term: the acceptance set is nonempty, so by monotonicity,  $\hat{x}_m$  is acceptable, and by the previous proposition, the acceptance set continues to be nonempty when the politician chooses  $\hat{x}_m$ , yielding the maximum possible payoff to the politician.

Next, we investigate the implications for equilibrium outcomes when politicians are highly office motivated, and in particular the possibility of obtaining a dynamic version of the Downsian median voter result. Note by Propositions 5.3 and 5.4, that the acceptance set is nonempty in a politician's first term of office, and that by choosing an acceptable policy, a politician can secure re-election with probability one in every period. One strategy that achieves this is simply choosing

the median  $\hat{x}_m$  in every period, but we have not ruled out other strategies that deliver the same outcome. The payoff to a type  $j$  politician from choosing the median in the first and all future terms of office is

$$\frac{u_j(\hat{x}_m) + \beta}{1 - \delta},$$

and the payoff from shirking is no more than

$$u_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \frac{\delta u_j(\hat{x}_j)}{1 - \delta}.$$

Thus, assuming the discount factor is positive, a sufficient condition for all types to compromise in all terms of office is

$$\beta > \frac{1}{\delta} \max_j [u_j(\hat{x}_j) - u_j(\hat{x}_m)].$$

Defining  $\bar{\beta}$  by the right-hand side of the above inequality, it follows that when the benefit of office exceeds this level, all politician types will secure re-election in all periods.

**Proposition 5.5** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure adverse selection, assume  $\beta > \bar{\beta}$ , and let  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  be a stationary electoral equilibrium. Then for all types  $j \in T$ , all  $\ell$ , and all personal histories  $\mathbf{y}^\ell$  along the path of play, the type  $j$  politician chooses an acceptable policy with probability one, i.e.,  $\pi_j(A(\mu_T(\mathbf{y}^\ell)|\psi)|\mathbf{y}^\ell) = 1$ .*

The preceding proposition gives a stability result for dynamic elections with office-motivated politicians: in equilibrium, office holders use their incumbency advantage to ensure continual re-election, so there is no turnover in office. But the policies chosen to achieve this outcome may be undesirable to the median voter, contrary to a responsive democracy result. The next result establishes that the median voter's ex ante payoff converges to the ideal payoff if politicians are sufficiently office-motivated and citizens are sufficiently patient. This means that all stationary electoral equilibria determine policies close to the median with high probability, delivering a *strong responsive democracy result* for the class of stationary electoral equilibria. Note that we normalize continuation values in the following result, so that we can compare them with expected per period payoffs.

**Proposition 5.6** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure adverse selection, assume that  $\beta > u_j(\hat{x}_j) - u_j(\hat{x}_m)$  for all  $j \in T$ , and let the discount factor  $\delta$  approach one.*

Then for every selection of stationary electoral equilibria  $\Psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  given discount factor  $\delta$ , the median voter's (normalized) continuation value of a challenger converges to the ideal payoff, i.e.,

$$\lim_{\delta \rightarrow 1} (1 - \delta)V_m^C(\Psi) = u_m(\hat{x}_m).$$

The argument for this result is facilitated by the observation that the type  $m$  politician simply chooses  $\hat{x}_m$  in every period and is complicated by the possibility that less desirable types pool with the median type in early terms of office. We begin by considering a fixed  $\delta$  close enough to one such that  $\beta > \bar{\beta}$  holds and an equilibrium  $\Psi$  given  $\delta$ , so that by Proposition 5.5 all politician types choose acceptable policies in all terms of office. Note that

$$V_m^C(\Psi) = \sum_j p_j \sum_x [u_m(x) + \delta V_m^I(p, x | \Psi)] \pi_j(x | p), \quad (20)$$

where we use the fact that incumbents are re-elected with probability one, from Proposition 5.5. Recall that Propositions 5.3 and 5.4 imply that the type  $m$  politician chooses the median policy in every term of office. Then, since  $V_m^I(p, x | \Psi) \geq V_m^C(\Psi)$  along the path of play and utilities are non-negative, it follows that

$$V_m^C(\Psi) \geq \delta p_m V_m^I(p, \hat{x}_m | \Psi) + \delta(1 - p_m)V_m^C(\Psi),$$

or equivalently,

$$V_m^I(p, \hat{x}_m | \Psi) \leq \left(1 + \frac{1 - \delta}{\delta p_m}\right) V_m^C(\Psi). \quad (21)$$

We are interested in personal histories along the path of play in which the median policy is chosen initially. Let  $\mathbf{z}^k = (\hat{x}_m, \dots, \hat{x}_m, y)$  denote a personal history in which the median policy is chosen for the first  $k$  terms of office followed by a choice  $y \neq \hat{x}_m$ ; let  $Z^k$  be the set of such personal histories that occur with positive probability along the path of play determined by  $\Psi$ ; and let  $\mathbf{z}^\infty = (\hat{x}_m, \hat{x}_m, \dots)$  be the infinite sequence of median policies. Let  $V_m^I(\mathbf{z}^k | \Psi)$  denote the expected discounted payoff to the median voter from re-electing an incumbent with personal history  $\mathbf{z}^k$  in equilibrium  $\Psi$ . Finally, we denote by  $\Pr(\mathbf{z}^k)$  the probability of  $\mathbf{z}^k$  determined by  $\Psi$ , conditional on choice  $\hat{x}_m$  in the first term. Then

$$V_m^I(p, \hat{x}_m | \Psi) = \Pr(\mathbf{z}^\infty) \frac{u_m(\hat{x})}{1 - \delta} + \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \sum_{\mathbf{z}^k \in Z^k} \Pr(\mathbf{z}^k) (\delta)^{k-1} V_m^I(\mathbf{z}^k | \Psi),$$

where  $\Pr(\mathbf{z}^\infty) \geq p_m > 0$ . For simplicity, assume that the infimum of  $V_m^I(\mathbf{z}^k|\Psi)$  is attained over  $k$  and  $\mathbf{z}^k \in Z^k$  by  $\mathbf{z}^{k*}$ .<sup>19</sup>

We claim that

$$V_m^I(\mathbf{z}^{k*}|\Psi) \geq \frac{u_m(\hat{x}_m)}{1-\delta} - \frac{(1-\delta)u_m(\hat{x}_m)}{\delta p_m^2},$$

for suppose otherwise. Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} V_m^I(\mathbf{z}^{k*}|\Psi) &< \Pr(\mathbf{z}^\infty) \left( \frac{u_m(\hat{x})}{1-\delta} - \frac{(1-\delta)u_m(\hat{x}_m)}{\delta p_m^2} \right) + \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \sum_{\mathbf{z}^k \in Z^k} \Pr(\mathbf{z}^k) \delta^{k-1} V_m^I(\mathbf{z}^k|\Psi) \\ &\leq V_m^I(p, \hat{x}_m|\Psi) - p_m \left( \frac{(1-\delta)u_m(\hat{x}_m)}{\delta p_m^2} \right) \\ &\leq V_m^C(\Psi), \end{aligned}$$

where the last inequality uses (21). But then an incumbent with personal history  $\mathbf{z}^{k*}$  is not re-elected, a contradiction. This establishes the claim.

Note that a lower bound for  $V_m^I(p, \hat{x}_m|\Psi)$  is obtained if we suppose that conditional on choice  $\hat{x}_m$  in the first term, all types other than the median choose the worst possible policy in the second term. By the claim, this policy minimizes the median voter's utility in the current period (and this minimum payoff is non-negative) but entails a payoff close to the ideal thereafter; thus,

$$V_m^I(p, \hat{x}_m|\Psi) \geq p_m \left( \frac{u_m(\hat{x}_m)}{1-\delta} \right) + (1-p_m) \delta \left( \frac{u_m(\hat{x}_m)}{1-\delta} - \frac{(1-\delta)u_m(\hat{x}_m)}{\delta p_m^2} \right),$$

which delivers the desired result. Combining the above inequality with (21), we have

$$(1-\delta)V_m^C(\Psi) \geq \left( \frac{\delta p_m}{1+\delta p_m-\delta} \right) \left( p_m + \delta - \delta p_m - \frac{(1-p_m)\delta(1-\delta)^2}{\delta p_m^2} \right) u_m(\hat{x}_m).$$

Taking the limit as  $\delta \rightarrow 1$ , we have  $(1-\delta)V_m^C(\Psi) \rightarrow u_m(\hat{x}_m)$ , as desired.

Focussing on simple electoral equilibria, Banks and Duggan (2008) provide a tighter responsive democracy result. For a simple equilibrium  $\Psi = (\sigma, \mu)$ , since the acceptance set  $A(\Psi)$  is fixed, a type  $j$  politician can simply choose the best acceptable policy to secure re-election in every period, so the payoff from compromising in every term of office is  $\max_{x \in A(\Psi)} u_j(x)/(1-\delta)$ , and all types will compromise in equilibrium if

$$\frac{1}{1-\delta} \max_{x \in A(\Psi)} u_j(x) + \frac{\beta}{1-\delta} > u_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \delta V_j^C(\Psi).$$

<sup>19</sup>If the infimum is not attained, then the argument is easily modified to choose a  $\mathbf{z}^{k*}$  that yields a payoff close to the infimum.



A risk aversion argument implies that the first term on the left-hand side is greater than the last term on the right-hand side, and so a sufficient condition for all politicians to compromise is that for all types  $j \in T$ ,

$$\frac{\beta\delta}{1-\delta} \geq u_j(\hat{x}_j). \quad (22)$$

Because all politician types compromise, under this condition, it follows that every type is “above average,” and therefore the median voter’s expected payoff conditional on each  $x \in A(\psi)$  on the path of play is equal to  $V_m^C(\psi)$ . In particular, the expected payoff from re-electing a type  $m$  politician equals the expected payoff from a challenger, and this is only possible if all types choose the median. This logic delivers the following result, a sharp responsive democracy result for simple electoral equilibria.

**Proposition 5.7** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure adverse selection, assume inequality (22) holds for all types, and let  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  be a simple electoral equilibrium. Then each type  $j$  politician chooses the median policy in the first term, i.e.,  $\pi_j(\{\hat{x}_m\} | p) = 1$ , and in all future terms of office.*

Note that inequality (22) holds if  $\delta > 0$  and  $\beta$  is sufficiently large, and it holds if  $\beta > 0$  and  $\delta$  is sufficiently close to one. This yields the following corollary, which extends Proposition 5.6 by establishing a median voter theorem even when the office benefit is small. Although the result is silent on the case of policy-motivated candidates, Banks and Duggan (2008) show that when there is no office benefit, i.e.,  $\beta = 0$ , if the discount factor approaches one, then the acceptance set (and the policy choices of all politician types) converge to the median policy.

**Corollary 5.1** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure adverse selection, assume  $\delta\beta > 0$ . If either  $\beta$  is sufficiently large, or  $\delta$  is sufficiently close to one, then in every simple electoral equilibrium, each type  $j$  politician chooses the median policy in every term of office.*

Again, elections facilitate commitment, and electoral incentives lead to responsive democracy if politicians are patient or office benefit is large.

## 5.4 Term limits

Bernhardt, Dubey, and Hughson (2004) consider a version of the model with a continuum of types and an arbitrary, finite term limit, but for tractability we discuss just the two-period version of the model. Clearly, as in Section 3.3, second-term

politicians simply choose their ideal policies in equilibrium, a feature that qualitatively changes the equilibrium dynamics of the model. In contrast to Section 3.3, we no longer obtain the responsive democracy result when politicians are office motivated and citizens are patient. Even equilibrium existence becomes problematic, and we must relax our restriction of deferential voting and allow for mixed electoral outcomes (i.e., endogenous uncertainty about an incumbent's prospects for re-election). We extend the concept of stationary electoral equilibrium to allow politicians' strategies to depend on the term of office, while still imposing optimality of these choices. We assume that a first-term incumbent who chooses  $x$  is re-elected if that is the strict preference of the median voter, i.e.,  $V_m^I(p, x|\Psi) > V_m^C(\Psi)$ , and that the challenger is elected if the reverse inequality holds; and if the median is indifferent, then we assume that the probability of re-election is  $\rho_m(x)$ , which may now be between zero and one. We continue to assume voters' strategies are monotonic, but instead of simply expressing this condition in terms of a utility cut-off for the median voter, we require that the probability of re-election is weakly increasing in the utility of the median voter from a first-term office holder's policy choice.

To see why mixed voting is needed, we consider the case of highly office-motivated candidates and suppose instead that voting is pure. We first note that the acceptance set for first-term office holders is nonempty (otherwise, the type  $m$  politician chooses  $\hat{x}_m$ , revealing her type, and so she is re-elected), so  $A(p|\Psi) \neq \emptyset$ . The payoff to a type  $j$  politician from compromising is then at least equal to

$$u_j(\hat{x}_m) + \beta + \delta[u_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta] + \delta^2 V_j^C(\Psi),$$

and the payoff from shirking is no more than

$$u_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \delta V_j^C(\Psi),$$

so that all politician types compromise in the first term if

$$u_j(\hat{x}_m) + \beta > (1 - \delta) \left[ u_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \delta \frac{u_j(\hat{x}_j)}{1 - \delta} \right].$$

This holds if  $\beta > \bar{\beta}$ , which we again assume, so that every type of first-term office holder will compromise by choosing the best element of  $A(p|\Psi)$ .

We demonstrate a contradiction to existence of equilibrium in pure voting strategies in two exhaustive and mutually exclusive cases, assuming without loss of generality that the median voter weakly prefers  $\hat{x}_1$  to  $\hat{x}_n$ . Note that

$$V_m^C(\Psi) = \sum_j p_j \sum_x [u_m(x) + \delta u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \delta^2 V_m^C(\Psi)] \pi_j^1(x),$$

where  $\pi_j^1$  is the proposal strategy of the type  $j$  politician in her first term of office. In the first case, the ideal policy of the type  $n$  politician belongs to the acceptance set, so all politician types simply choose their ideal policies, revealing their types to voters, and they are continually re-elected. It follows that voters place probability one on type  $j = n$  after observing  $\hat{x}_n$ , and then

$$\begin{aligned} V_m^C(\psi) &\geq p_m(1 + \delta)u_m(\hat{x}_m) + (1 - p_m)(1 + \delta)u_m(\hat{x}_n) + \delta^2 V_m^C(\psi) \\ &> (1 + \delta)u_m(\hat{x}_n) + \delta^2 V_m^C(\psi). \end{aligned}$$

This implies that

$$V_m^C(\psi) > u_m(\hat{x}_n) + \delta V_m^C(\psi) = V_m^I(p, \hat{x}_n | \psi),$$

and the median voter strictly prefers to elect a challenger over re-electing the type  $n$  incumbent, a contradiction.

In the second case, the acceptance set excludes  $\hat{x}_n$ . Then since type  $n$  politicians (and all other types whose ideal policies are not in the acceptance set) compromise by choosing an acceptable policy in their first term, the expected payoff to the median voter from policies chosen in the first term exceeds the lottery over ideal policies, i.e.,

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x u_m(x) \pi_j^1(x) > \sum_j p_j u_m(\hat{x}_j).$$

Let  $y$  minimize the median voter's expected payoff  $V_m^I(p, x | \psi)$  from re-electing the incumbent over the equilibrium policy choices  $x$  of first-term office holders. Then

$$\begin{aligned} V_m^I(p, y | \psi) &\leq \sum_j p_j \sum_x V_m^I(p, x | \psi) \pi_j^1(x) \\ &= \sum_j p_j u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \delta V_m^C(\psi) \\ &< \sum_j p_j \sum_x u_m(x) \pi_j^1(x) + \delta \sum_j p_j u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \delta^2 V_m^C(\psi) \\ &= V_m^C(\psi), \end{aligned}$$

and the median voter strictly prefers to elect a challenger over re-electing the incumbent following the choice  $y$ , again producing a contradiction. We conclude that equilibria in pure voting strategies do not generally exist, so that uncertainty about electoral outcomes arises as a necessity in the model with term limits.

Driving the failure of existence is the fact that given the opportunity to secure re-election, office-motivated politicians will do so, but this creates a *commitment*

*problem for voters*, who then have an incentive to replace a first-term incumbent with a fresh challenger. To balance these incentives, mixing is needed not just in policy choices of office holders but in electoral outcomes. For example, if an office holder gains a chance of re-election by choosing the median policy and the probability of success is less than one, then some politician types can be dissuaded from compromising, and then the incentive to insert a challenger in place of a first-term incumbent decreases, ameliorating the incentive problem of voters. Thus, the probability of electoral success must be set in equilibrium to obtain the correct separation of politician types and to generate indifference needed for mixed policy choices, and mixing over policies is set to maintain the median voter's indifference between incumbent and challenger over the relevant range.

The full responsiveness result cannot be obtained in the term limit model, for suppose there is an equilibrium  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  such that in every period, all types of office holder choose the median ideal policy. Since second-term politicians choose their ideal policies, it must be that in each period, the incumbent is replaced by a challenger with probability one, but then the first term of office is a politician's last, and non-median type  $j \neq m$  politicians have no incentive to compromise, so they would simply choose their ideal policies. The most that can be hoped for is that first-term politicians choose the median policy, with slack to allow non-median politicians to be re-elected with positive probability and choose their ideal policies in the second term. But the incentives of the term limit model preclude even that form of responsiveness, even when politicians are highly office motivated and citizens are patient, and even if we only ask that first-term office holders choose policies close to the median with high probability: the next result establishes that the expected payoff to the median voter from equilibrium policy choices of first-term office holders is bounded strictly below the ideal payoff.

**Proposition 5.8** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure adverse selection with two-period term limit, there is a bound  $\bar{u} < u_m(\hat{x}_m)$  such that for all levels of office benefit  $\beta \geq 0$  and all discount factors  $\delta \in [0, 1)$ , in every stationary electoral equilibrium  $\psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  for parameters  $(\beta, \delta)$ , the expected utility to the median voter from policies chosen by first-term office holders is below this bound, i.e.,*

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x u_m(x) \pi_j^1(x) \leq \bar{u}.$$

The logic for the above result is complicated by the possibility that for high  $\beta$  and  $\delta$  close to one, first-term office holders are incentivized to choose policies close to the median by a positive but small probability of re-election. The continuation

value of a challenger now takes the form

$$V_m^C(\Psi) = \sum_j p_j \left[ \sum_x [u_m(x) + \delta(\rho_m(x)[u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \delta V_m^C(\Psi)) + (1 - \rho_m(x))V_m^C(\Psi)]\pi_j^1(x) \right],$$

reflecting the fact that the politician who chooses  $x$  is re-elected with probability  $\rho_m(x)$ . We can break the right-hand side of the above expression into the sum  $A + B + C$  of three terms:

$$\begin{aligned} A &= \sum_j p_j \sum_x u_m(x)\pi_j^1(x) \\ B &= \delta \sum_x \rho_m(x) \left( \sum_j p_j [u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \delta V_m^C(\Psi)]\pi_j^1(x) \right) \\ C &= \delta \left( \sum_j p_j \sum_x (1 - \rho_m(x))\pi_j^1(x) \right) V_m^C(\Psi), \end{aligned}$$

where the term in parentheses in  $C$  is the ex ante probability that a first-term office holder fails to be re-elected; denote this quantity by  $e$ . We can rewrite  $B$  as

$$B = \delta \sum_x \rho_m(x) \left( \sum_k p_k \pi_k^1(x) \right) V_m^I(p, x | \Psi),$$

where the term in parentheses is the probability that a first-term office holder chooses policy  $x$ ; denote this by  $d(x)$ . Since  $\rho_m(x) > 0$  implies that  $V_m^I(p, x | \Psi) \geq V_m^C(\Psi)$ , we therefore have

$$V_m^C(\Psi) \geq \sum_j p_j \sum_x u_m(x)\pi_j^1(x) + \delta \sum_x \rho_m(x)d(x)V_m^C(\Psi) + \delta e V_m^C(\Psi).$$

Using  $(\sum_x \rho_m(x)d(x)) + e = 1$ , this implies

$$(1 - \delta)V_m^C(\Psi) \geq \sum_j p_j \sum_x u_m(x)\pi_j^1(x).$$

Now suppose that there exist office benefit  $\beta$  and discount factor  $\delta$  and a stationary electoral equilibrium  $\Psi = (\sigma, \mu)$  such that the expected payoff from policy choices of first-term office holders approaches the ideal payoff of the median voter, i.e.,

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x u_m(x)\pi_j^1(x) \rightarrow u_m(\hat{x}_m).$$

By the foregoing argument, it follows that the normalized continuation value of a challenger in fact approaches the ideal payoff of median voter, i.e.,  $(1 - \delta)V_m^C(\psi) \rightarrow u_m(\hat{x}_m)$ . Note that for all politician types  $j$ , if  $\pi_j^1$  puts positive probability on policy  $x$  such that  $\rho_m(x) = 0$ , then  $x = \hat{x}_j$ , and therefore  $\sum_x \text{sign}(\rho_m(x))\pi_j^1(x) \rightarrow 1$  for all  $j$ . Furthermore, this implies  $\sum_x (1 - \text{sign}(\rho_m(x)))d(x) \rightarrow 0$ . Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} V_m^C(\psi) &\leq \sum_x (1 - \text{sign}(\rho_m(x)))d(x)V_m^C(\psi) + \sum_x \text{sign}(\rho_m(x))d(x)V_m^I(p, x|\psi) \\ &= \sum_x (1 - \text{sign}(\rho_m(x)))d(x)V_m^C(\psi) \\ &\quad + \sum_j \sum_x \text{sign}(\rho_m(x))p_j\pi_j^1(x)[u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \delta V_m^C(\psi)], \end{aligned}$$

where we use the fact that

$$V_m^I(p, x|\psi) = \sum_j \frac{p_j\pi_j^1(x)}{d(x)}[u_m(\hat{x}_j) + \delta V_m^C(\psi)].$$

Therefore,

$$V_m^C(\psi)(1 - \delta) \sum_x \text{sign}(\rho_m(x))d(x) \leq \sum_j p_j \sum_x \text{sign}(\rho_m(x))\pi_j^1(x)u_m(\hat{x}_j).$$

Taking limits, we have  $u_m(\hat{x}_m) \leq \sum_{j \neq m} p_j u_m(\hat{x}_j)$ , a contradiction. We conclude that the expected payoff from equilibrium policy choices of first-term office holders is bounded strictly below the median voter's ideal payoff, as desired.

The root cause of this difficulty is again the *commitment problem of voters*, who prefer to replace an incumbent who is expected to shirk in her second term with a challenger who offers close to the ideal payoff to the median voter—even though voters might prefer to commit to re-election contingent on the choice of the median policy. This unraveling does not occur in the two-period model, precisely because there is no third period, so challengers are expected to shirk if elected, and there is no temptation to replace an incumbent who chooses the median.

## 5.5 Extensions and variations

The pure adverse selection model has been used to study the effects of various types of structure on institutions and policies. Bernhardt, Campuzano, Squintani, and Camara (2009) analyze the effects of parties, i.e., drawing challengers from the side of the spectrum opposite the incumbent. This strengthens the threat of an outside challenger and provides greater discipline of incumbent politicians: more

substantial competition leads to greater moderation of policy choices. Put differently, elections provide a stronger form of commitment in the partisan model, because voters know the cost of foregoing re-election is higher for an incumbent, making the prospect of choosing policies closer to the median more credible.

Bernhardt, Camara, and Squintani (2011) add valence to the model, and assume that voters observe an incumbent's valence but not her policy preferences. They show that if restrictions on risk aversion, office benefit, and valence heterogeneity hold, then there is a unique stationary equilibrium, and equilibria possess a partitional form, where now the cutoffs defining the win set and compromise set depend on the valence of the office holder. Furthermore, they show that equilibrium voter welfare increases as the distribution of valence increases in the sense of first order stochastic dominance. Camara (2012) considers dynamic elections in the context of a general equilibrium model of public good provision, where politicians are distinguished by a vector of productivity parameters and choose a tax rate while in office, and voters are distinguished by their productivity of labor and preference for public good. He establishes existence of a stationary equilibrium and shows that equilibria have a partitional form in which, again, the cutoffs defining the win set and compromise set vary with the productivity parameters of the office holder.

Kang (2005) introduces a signaling model of electoral campaigns, in which a challenger can signal her quality by a costly campaign activity. She characterizes an equilibrium in which only high quality challengers run costly campaigns, and whether this occurs is determined by the incumbent's attractiveness to voters: if the incumbent is very strong, then the challenger never signals her quality and the incumbent is always re-elected; and if the incumbent is very weak, then the challenger is automatically elected and does not signal. In the complementary case, however, high quality challengers do signal their quality and defeat incumbents of intermediate strength. In work related to the pure adverse selection model, Meiwitz (2007) considers a model in which politicians have private information about their budget constraints, and Casamatta and De Paoli (2007) assume politicians have private information about the cost of public good production. Kalandrakis (2009) studies electoral dynamics in a two-party system in which each party's type may change stochastically over time.

A literature on dynamic elections with complete information, in which voters observe the types of elected politicians, has received attention and has connections to the framework proposed above. A modeling challenge present in this approach is posed by the anti-folk theorem for dynamic elections, Proposition 4.3, which states that when voters observe the incumbent's type, the only differential, stationary subgame perfect equilibrium is that in which office holders always choose their ideal policies. To avoid this degenerate prediction, different authors have em-

ployed different analytical tactics. Barro (1973) considers a model of public good provision in which voters and politicians are identical (except that politicians receive rents from office), and voters re-elect an incumbent depending on whether the politician's public good production satisfies a threshold. This threshold is chosen optimally by the voters, meaning that after some histories, voters elect a challenger over an incumbent despite being indifferent between the two candidates; formally, these strategies are not deferential. This creates a multiplicity of equilibria, including the degenerate equilibrium in which all politicians shirk and are removed from office, but Barro (1973) essentially selects the optimal stationary equilibrium for the voters. He examines the optimization problems of voters and politicians, and he establishes the responsive democracy result that public good levels converge to the voters' ideal when the rewards of office are large and when the discount factor is close to one.

Van Weelden (2013) considers a model under similar assumptions, but he assumes that office benefit is endogenously determined as an amount of rent seeking chosen by the politician, and that this is desirable to politicians and costly to voters. Thus, he effectively assumes a two-dimensional policy space, and in contrast to our framework, it is not possible to elect a politician whose policy preferences align with the median voter's. Moreover, in his baseline model, Van Weelden (2013) allows a representative voter to directly choose the challenger's type. Like Barro (1973), he avoids the anti-folk theorem by dropping the restriction to deferential voting strategies, and he selects from the ensuing multiplicity of equilibria by analyzing the optimal stationary equilibrium for the voter. In particular, Van Weelden (2013) shows that it is better for the voter to alternately select from two non-median types (using one as a threat for the other) than to always elect the median politician, and he establishes the responsive democracy result that as citizens become patient, the policy and rent-seeking choices of office holders converge to the voter's ideal in the optimal equilibrium. Van Weelden (2014) examines a variant of the model with two possible candidates and three types of voter, and he shows that when citizens are sufficiently patient, the optimal amount of polarization between the candidates' ideal policies is positive.

Aragones, Palfrey, and Postlewaite (2007) use history-dependent strategies to generate equilibria that mirror the simple electoral equilibria of the pure adverse selection model. In the latter model, an office holder may be induced to compromise her policy choices by the incentive to pool with desirable politician types, i.e., to appear like a more moderate politician, who will choose moderate policies in the future and thus be re-elected. In the model of Aragones, Palfrey, and Postlewaite (2007), an office holder who has compromised in the past continues to compromise in the future, but once she deviates, she chooses her ideal policy in all future periods, leading voters to elect a challenger. Thus, an office holder may be induced



to compromise to maintain her “reputation” for policy moderation, generating the familiar partitioned form of equilibrium in the pure adverse selection model. Formally, the authors use non-stationary strategies to escape the anti-folk theorem.

Duggan and Forand (2014) assume that voters observe an office holder’s type, and they avoid the anti-folk theorem by assuming an office holder is committed to a platform once she chooses it, until a variable describing the state of the economy changes; the single-state version of this model leads to equilibria with a partitioned form that correspond to the simple electoral equilibria of the pure adverse selection model. They establish strong responsive democracy results in two cases: when politicians are purely policy motivated, i.e.,  $\beta = 0$ , the median voter’s equilibrium expected discounted payoff converges to her ideal payoff as citizens become patient; and when the office benefit is sufficiently large, all politician types choose the median voter’s ideal policy in equilibrium. The authors extend these results to the multi-state model, and they show that a weaker form of responsive democracy holds even if the median voter’s type depends on the state. In this setting, we can imagine that policies are chosen by median voters in all states directly, removing politicians from the equation, in a hypothetical “representative voting game.” The authors show that for every stationary Markov perfect equilibrium in the representative voting game, there is an equivalent stationary electoral equilibrium in the dynamic electoral model.

The preceding analysis of the pure adverse selection model has focussed on stationary or simple electoral equilibria, and it is instructive to consider the restrictiveness of this concept by characterizing equilibrium outcomes when more general equilibria are allowed, where voters and politicians can condition their choices on the history of play. It is clear that if policy choices are observable, if there is a positive benefit to holding office, and if politicians are sufficiently farsighted, then almost any path of policies can be supported as the path of play of some perfect Bayesian equilibrium. Driving this simple observation is the fact that for a given office benefit  $\beta > 0$ , when  $\delta$  is close enough to one, the discounted sum  $\frac{\beta}{1-\delta}$  of potential office benefits can be used to induce an office holder to choose the worst policy in the interval  $X$ . Indeed, let  $\mathbf{x} = (x_1, x_2, \dots)$  be an arbitrary sequence of policies in  $X$ , and consider a strategy profile such that in each period  $t$ , every type of politician chooses  $x_t$ ; voters re-elect an incumbent as long as she has chosen  $x_t$  in every period for which she held office, and otherwise they elect a challenger; and beliefs may be specified arbitrarily. Since all politician types choose the same policies, voters are indifferent between re-electing an incumbent and electing a challenger. Given a type  $j$  office holder, the discounted payoff to choosing  $x_t$  in

period  $t$ , being re-elected, and continuing to follow the above strategy is

$$w_j(x_t) + \beta + \left( \sum_{t'=t+1}^{\infty} \delta^{t'-1} w_j(x_{t'}) \right) + \frac{\delta\beta}{1-\delta},$$

and the best one-shot deviation is to choose her ideal policy  $\hat{x}_j$  and forego re-election, which yields a discounted payoff of

$$w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \sum_{t'=t+1}^{\infty} \delta^{t'-1} w_j(x_{t'}).$$

Note that the latter is less than the former if

$$\frac{\delta\beta}{1-\delta} > w_j(\hat{x}_j) - w_j(x_t),$$

which holds when  $\delta$  is close enough to one. Thus, it is optimal for each type of office holder to follow the prescribed strategy, thereby supporting the arbitrary path  $\mathbf{x}$  of policies.

The above argument is quite general and holds across the complete information and pure adverse selection models, but it relies on increasing  $\delta$  given a fixed, positive level of office benefit. Duggan (2014a) shows that in the model of pure adverse selection, a more complex equilibrium construction can be used to support arbitrary policy paths when citizens are patient, even if politicians are purely policy motivated. Thus, the restriction to stationarity (or some other restriction on history dependence) is needed to obtain predictive power in the pure adverse selection model.

A related literature departs from the dynamic electoral framework considered above by assuming commitment on the part of the challenger, or both the challenger and the incumbent. The latter models extend the traditional Downsian model, in which both candidates take positions, and includes work by Alesina (1988) and Duggan and Fey (2006). The former class includes papers by Wittman (1977), Kramer (1977), and Forand (2014). In particular, Forand (2014) establishes a form of responsive democracy as politicians become patient, showing that equilibrium dynamics lead to alternation between two policies, and that these policies converge to the median voter's ideal policy as the discount factor approaches one. All of these papers assume complete information. As discussed above, Duggan and Forand (2014) allow for an evolving state variable and assume that the incumbent can make "ex post commitments," i.e., an elected politician's first policy choice in a state of the world is binding until the state changes, but the politician cannot commit to policy in advance of transitioning to a new state.

## 6 Moral hazard

We now extend the pure adverse selection model of Section 5 to the model with imperfect monitoring. Throughout this section, we consider the rent-seeking environment with moral hazard, and with the exception of Subsection 6.2, we maintain assumptions (C1)–(C4). Thus, as in Subsection 3.4, a policy choice  $x$  stochastically determines an outcome  $y$ , which is realized from the density  $f(y - x)$ . In the rent-seeking environment, we may interpret  $y$  as a public good level and  $x$  as an effort choice, so that voters prefer higher outcomes, whereas politicians internalize the effort choice and, depending on their types, prefer lower exertion of effort. By the MLRP, higher outcomes are evidence of higher effort choices, and so equilibria are characterized by a cutoff outcome  $\bar{y}$  that is necessary and sufficient for re-election of the incumbent, and the question of responsive democracy reduces to inducing the greatest effort possible.

We begin by examining the pure moral hazard model, in which there is a single type, or slightly more generally, the voters' prior beliefs are concentrated on a single type. In this setting, which has played an important role in the development of the literature, stationary electoral equilibria degenerate because of indifference among candidates, and the analysis typically takes the perspective of setting an optimal cutoff for voters. We then proceed to the model with adverse selection and one-sided learning, where we discuss a simplified version of the model with no term limit, and we give a more complete analysis of the model with two-period term limit, after which we close by discussing the literature on symmetric learning, where politicians do not observe their own types and update their beliefs in the same way as voters do.

Throughout, we emphasize the success or limitations of electoral mechanisms in eliciting effort on the part of office holders. In the pure moral hazard model, we show that high office benefit leads to a *strong form of responsive democracy*: as politicians become more office-motivated, policy choices increase without limit. In the model with adverse selection and moral hazard, however, the *commitment problem of voters* implies that equilibrium policy choices are bounded above: the continuation value of a challenger cannot exceed the expected utility from the ideal policy of the highest type. In the absence of a term limit, we deduce the *qualified responsive democracy result* that the continuation value of a challenger approaches this upper bound as citizens become patient. In the presence of a term limit, we deduce an upper bound strictly below this limit, showing that patience does not produce the qualified responsiveness result. This problem does not arise in the two-period model of Subsection 3.4, where the game ends after the second period, so that voters are not subject to the temptation of replacing a hard-working incumbent with a fresh challenger.

## 6.1 Pure moral hazard

In the rent-seeking environment, voters prefer greater effort by politicians and are therefore modeled as a unitary actor, but we can still consider the issue of policy responsiveness: here, responsiveness corresponds to positive levels of effort chosen by politicians, and greater levels of effort generate higher expected utility for all voters. The literature on infinite-horizon models of pure moral hazard is occupied by Ferejohn's (1986) model of political agency, which differs from ours in that in his framework an office holder observes an idiosyncratic productivity shock before choosing an unobservable action; moreover, voters are assumed to be risk neutral. He shows, among other things, that the highest equilibrium payoff of the voters is increasing in office benefit, establishing the responsiveness result, but Ferejohn does not consider the degree of responsiveness that can be achieved by large office benefits.

An issue that arises in the pure moral hazard model is that because all politicians are identical after all histories, the restriction to stationary electoral equilibria leaves only a trivial equilibrium: voters, being indifferent between the incumbent and challenger, always vote for the incumbent, so the office holder always shirks, i.e., chooses zero effort. This is just the problem posed by the anti-folk theorem, Proposition 4.3. Accordingly, in this setting, the focus on deferential strategies is relaxed to allow the voter to set an arbitrary cutoff in the space of outcomes, and then the value of the optimal cutoff is analyzed. Since the voter is in fact indifferent between the two candidates, every cutoff is time-consistent, and so this approach amounts to a selection of equilibria. Taking the larger view that voters differ in their preferences and that (by an order restriction argument) the representative voter is the median voter type, it may be unrealistic to assume that the electorate coordinates on the equilibrium that is optimal for the median voter. Nevertheless, it is a reasonable starting point for the analysis and, at any rate, establishes an important normative benchmark.

We drop Ferejohn's productivity shock and examine the median voter's optimization problem in the simple rent-seeking environment, effectively allowing the voter to commit to a cutoff before the beginning of the game; again, since the voter is always indifferent between the candidates, this commitment assumption does not rely on an outside enforcement mechanism. We find that the median voter can induce positive effort, and that *greater office-motivation leads to arbitrarily high effort levels, delivering responsive democracy* in the optimal equilibrium for the voter. The logic is simple: if the voter uses a fixed cutoff as the value of office increases, then politicians could (and would) win with probability approaching one by increasing their effort to arbitrarily high levels, and the optimal cutoff can do no worse than this.

The analysis of the model with a two-period term limit is qualitatively different: every finite cutoff in the space of outcomes is time-inconsistent, so that an outside enforcement mechanism is needed to generate positive levels of effort in equilibrium. To see the logic of this, suppose that politicians chose a positive level of effort in their first term in order to satisfy, in expectation, a finite cutoff of the voter. The voter's cutoff can be finite in equilibrium only if the expected payoff of re-electing the incumbent is at least equal to the expected payoff of a challenger. But the incumbent will always shirk in her second term, whereas the voter can select a challenger, who (by supposition) exerts a positive level of effort. In this case, the temptation of an untried challenger makes it impossible for the voter to commit to a finite cutoff, and therefore first-term politicians cannot be induced to exert positive effort. This logic extends to arbitrary, finite term limits.

We begin by departing from our maintained assumption that the distribution of the challenger's type has full support, and instead we assume that it is degenerate on a single type, which we suppress, and  $\theta = 1$ . Since updating no longer occurs, we suppress the belief system  $\mu$  in the description of equilibrium. Now, consider a strategy profile  $\sigma$  such that voters re-elect the incumbent if and only if  $y \geq \bar{y}$ , where  $y$  is the realized outcome and  $\bar{y}$  is an arbitrary cutoff, and such that office holders mix over policy according to  $\tilde{\pi}$  in each period. For most of the subsection, the cutoff will be fixed at  $\bar{y}$ . Then the continuation value of a challenger is simply the expected utility generated by mixtures over policy, i.e.,  $V^C(\sigma) = \frac{1}{1-\delta} \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \tilde{\pi}(x)$ , and the value of the office holder's optimization problem net of current office benefit, denoted  $W(\tilde{x}, \bar{y})$ , uniquely satisfies

$$W(\tilde{\pi}, \bar{y}) = \max_{x \in X} w(x) + \delta[(1 - F(\bar{y} - x))(W(\tilde{\pi}, \bar{y}) + \beta) + F(\bar{y} - x) \frac{\sum_{\tilde{x}} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\tilde{x}] \tilde{\pi}(\tilde{x})}{1 - \delta}],$$

where we drop the subscript from the utility function  $w$ , and we add the politician's office benefit for the current period as a separate term. The first order condition for this problem is of course

$$w'(x) + f(\bar{y} - x) \delta \left[ W(\tilde{\pi}, \bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \tilde{\pi}(x)}{1 - \delta} \right] = 0. \quad (23)$$

Let  $\hat{x}$  denote the ideal policy of the politician.

As in Subsection 3.4, we can consider the constrained version of the first-term politicians' optimization problem with objective function

$$U(x, r; \tilde{\pi}) = w(x) + r \delta \left( W(\tilde{\pi}, \bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\sum_{\tilde{x}} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\tilde{x}] \tilde{\pi}(\tilde{x})}{1 - \delta} \right),$$

which we now explicitly parameterize by the mixed policy strategy  $\tilde{\pi}$ . We encounter some difficulty in reformulating (C3) in the present setting, because the

mixture  $\tilde{\pi}$  is endogenous. We must therefore phrase the condition so that the payoff from holding office is positive for all possible values that  $\tilde{\pi}$  might take, but policy is unbounded, and so the voter's expected utility from  $\tilde{\pi}$  is, in principle, unbounded. Of course, if the payoff from holding office is negative, then politicians will not mix over high policies. It suffices for the equilibrium analysis to specify the condition for the case in which politicians choose their ideal policy with probability one,

$$(C3) \quad \text{for all } \bar{y}, W(\hat{x}, \bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}]}{1-\delta} > 0,$$

which holds if  $\beta$  is sufficiently large. In particular, (C3) is satisfied if politician preferences are obtained from voter preferences by a cost term that is not too large, i.e.,  $v(x) = \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x]$  and  $\beta > c(\hat{x})$ .

**Proposition 6.1** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure moral hazard, (C3) is satisfied if for all  $x$ ,  $v(x) = \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x]$  and  $\beta > c(\hat{x})$ .*

To see the result, suppose that (C3) does not hold. Note that given cutoff  $\bar{y}$ , the value of the politicians' problem is at least equal to the discounted expected payoff from choosing the ideal policy  $\hat{x}$ . Since (C3) does not hold, a lower bound for the latter is obtained by the discounted expected payoff if the politician is always re-elected after choosing  $\hat{x}$ . Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} W(\hat{x}, \bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}]}{1-\delta} &\geq \frac{w(\hat{x}) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}]}{1-\delta}}{1-\delta} \\ &= \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}] - c(\hat{x}) + \beta}{1-\delta} - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}]}{1-\delta} \\ &> 0, \end{aligned}$$

a contradiction. This establishes (C3), as desired.

The objective function  $U(x, r; \tilde{\pi})$  is concave, but in the corresponding optimization problem,

$$\begin{aligned} &\max_{(x,r)} U(x, r; \tilde{\pi}) \\ &\text{s.t. } r \leq 1 - F(\bar{y} - x), \end{aligned}$$

the constraint inherits the natural non-convexity of the distribution function  $F$ , paralleling difficulties in the basic probabilistic voting model and the two-period moral hazard model; see Figures 1 or 5. This leads to the possibility of multiple optimal policies.

Because an office holder takes the mixture  $\tilde{\pi}$  used by other politicians as given in her optimization problem, and because her payoff depends on  $\tilde{\pi}$  through the continuation value of a challenger, politicians are engaged in a dynamic *game*—we

cannot treat it simply as a dynamic programming problem—and non-convexities necessitate the analysis of equilibria in mixed strategies. This difficulty could be assumed away by setting the payoff of an out of office politician equal to zero, but we maintain the assumption that politicians return to the electorate after their political careers have ended, consistent with the citizen-candidate approach to elections.

We deal with the problem of mixing by again assuming (C4), which implies that for every cutoff  $\bar{y}$  and every mixture  $\tilde{\pi}$ , if the net value of office is positive, i.e.,

$$W(\tilde{\pi}, \bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \tilde{\pi}(x)}{1 - \delta} > 0,$$

then the objective function of the politician has at most two local maximizers and, therefore, at most two maximizers; the proof proceeds exactly as that for Proposition 3.4. We let  $x^*(\tilde{\pi}, \bar{y})$  and  $x_*(\tilde{\pi}, \bar{y})$  denote the greatest and least optimal policy choices, respectively. By standard continuity arguments, the functions  $x^*(\tilde{\pi}, \bar{y})$  and  $x_*(\tilde{\pi}, \bar{y})$  are upper semi-continuous and lower semi-continuous, respectively. Of course, any mixture over these optimal policies is optimal, and since the optimal policies themselves depend on the expected mixture  $\tilde{\pi}$ , we see that even in the simple model of pure moral hazard, an equilibrium in the game among politicians must solve a fixed point problem. This, in turn, raises the issues of existence and uniqueness of equilibrium.

Fortunately, both issues can be resolved by elementary arguments. Our analysis is facilitated by the following result, which shows that the value of office is decreasing in the policy choices  $\tilde{x}$  of politicians. In the statement of the next proposition, we write the value function  $W(\tilde{x}, \bar{y})$  as a function of a policy choice  $\tilde{x}$ , rather than the mixed policy strategy that places probability on on that choice.

**Proposition 6.2** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure moral hazard, given cutoff  $\bar{y} \in \mathbb{R}$ , the expression*

$$W(\tilde{x}, \bar{y}) - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\tilde{x}]}{1 - \delta}$$

*is decreasing in  $\tilde{x}$ .*

To prove the result, we differentiate the Bellman equation with respect to  $\tilde{x}$  to obtain

$$\frac{\partial W}{\partial \tilde{x}}(\tilde{x}, \bar{y}) = \delta(1 - F(\bar{y} - x)) \frac{\partial W}{\partial \tilde{x}}(\tilde{x}, \bar{y}) + \frac{\delta F(\bar{y} - x)}{1 - \delta} \frac{d \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\tilde{x}]}{d \tilde{x}},$$

where  $x$  is any solution to the politician's problem. Solving, we obtain

$$\frac{\partial W}{\partial \tilde{x}}(\tilde{x}, \bar{y}) = \left( \frac{\delta F(\bar{y} - x)}{1 - \delta + \delta F(\bar{y} - x)} \right) \frac{d \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\tilde{x}]}{d \tilde{x}} \frac{1}{1 - \delta}.$$

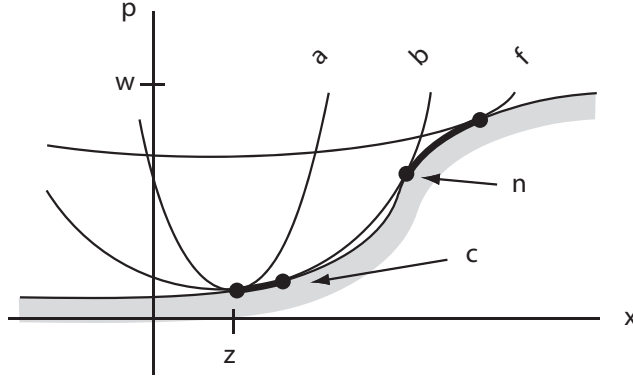


Figure 12: Multiple optimal policies

The coefficient in parentheses is strictly between zero and one, which implies that the expression

$$W(\tilde{x}, \bar{y}) - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\tilde{x}]}{1 - \delta}$$

is strictly decreasing in  $\tilde{x}$ , as claimed.

The above proposition implies that if other politicians choose policy  $\tilde{x}$ , then an office holder’s optimal policy choices decrease with  $\tilde{x}$ , for when  $W(\tilde{x}, \bar{y}) - \frac{1}{1 - \delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\tilde{x}]$  decreases, the politicians’ indifference curves become steeper, reflecting the relatively greater weight placed on current policy. More formally, if  $x$  is optimal given  $\tilde{x}$  and  $x'$  is optimal given  $\tilde{x}' > \tilde{x}$ , then  $x' > x$ . If there are multiple optimal policy choices given  $\tilde{x}$ , then an increase in  $\tilde{x}$  may lead to discontinuities in optimal policies. As long as the net value of office is strictly positive, however, there are at most two optimal policy choices, and such a discontinuity can only occur if there is a unique optimal policy as we approach  $\tilde{x}$  from below, and the optimal policies jump down at  $\tilde{x}$ . and decreasing in  $\tilde{x}$ ; see Figure 12.

Now, by (C3), the net value of office is strictly positive when politicians choose the ideal policy  $\hat{x}$ . Thus, by inspection of the first order condition in (23), politicians optimally exert positive effort given  $\hat{x}$ , i.e.,  $x_*(\hat{x}, \bar{y}) > \hat{x}$ . Increasing the policy used by politicians to  $\tilde{x} > \hat{x}$ , we see that the “best response” policy either decreases continuously until it crosses the 45° line, in which case the unique equilibrium in the game among politicians is in pure strategies, or it jumps across the 45° line, in which case we rely on mixed strategies. Specifically, if  $\tilde{x}$  is the value at which the best response policy jumps across the diagonal, then there is a least optimal policy, denoted  $x_*$ , and a greatest optimal policy, denoted  $x^*$ . We identify the mixed strategy equilibrium in the game among politicians as the mixture  $\pi^*$  over



$x^*$  and  $x_*$  such that

$$\pi^*(x^*)\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x^*(\tilde{x}, \bar{y})] + \pi^*(x_*)\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x_*] = \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\tilde{x}],$$

so that the Bellman equation for the politicians is the same given  $\pi^*$  as it is given  $\tilde{x}$ ; see Figure 13. If the net value of office is strictly positive at  $\tilde{x}$ , then by (C4) these are the only optimal policy choices, and the equilibrium is unique.

This argument proves existence of equilibrium, and in the following result, we establish that the net value of office is indeed strictly positive in every equilibrium, delivering uniqueness as well. In the sequel, we let  $\pi^*(\bar{y})$  be the unique equilibrium mixture over policies; we may write  $x^*(\bar{y})$  and  $x_*(\bar{y})$  for the greatest and least optimal policy choices of the politicians, respectively; and we let  $r^*(\bar{y})$  be the probability that a politician chooses the greatest optimal policy. Finally, we write  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi]$  as shorthand for the expected utility  $\sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x]\pi(x)$ .

**Proposition 6.3** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure moral hazard, assume (C1)–(C4). Then for any finite cutoff  $\bar{y} \in \mathbb{R}$ , there is a unique equilibrium mixed policy strategy  $\pi^*(\bar{y})$  in the game among politicians, and in equilibrium, the net value of holding office is positive, i.e.,*

$$W(\pi^*(\bar{y}), \bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*(\bar{y})]}{1 - \delta} > 0,$$

and  $\pi^*(\bar{x})$  places positive probability on at most two policies, say  $x^*$  and  $x_*$ , where  $\hat{x} < x_* \leq x^*$ . Moreover,  $\pi^*(\bar{y})$  is a continuous function of the cutoff.

We have already discussed existence. Now let  $\pi^*$  be any equilibrium in the game among politicians. To prove that the net value of office is positive, suppose otherwise. By inspection of the first order condition in (23), it follows that politicians mix over policies less than or equal to the ideal policy, i.e.,  $x^*(\bar{y}) \leq \hat{x}$ . Since an office holder can always choose the ideal policy, we have

$$W(\pi^*, \bar{y}) \geq w(\hat{x}) + \delta \left[ (1 - F(\bar{y} - \hat{x})) (W(\pi^*, \bar{y}) + \beta) + F(\bar{y} - \hat{x}) \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*]}{1 - \delta} \right].$$

This implies that

$$\begin{aligned} W(\pi^*, \bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*]}{1 - \delta} \\ \geq w(\hat{x}) + \beta - \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*] + \delta(1 - F(\bar{y} - \hat{x})) \left[ W(\pi^*, \bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*]}{1 - \delta} \right], \end{aligned}$$

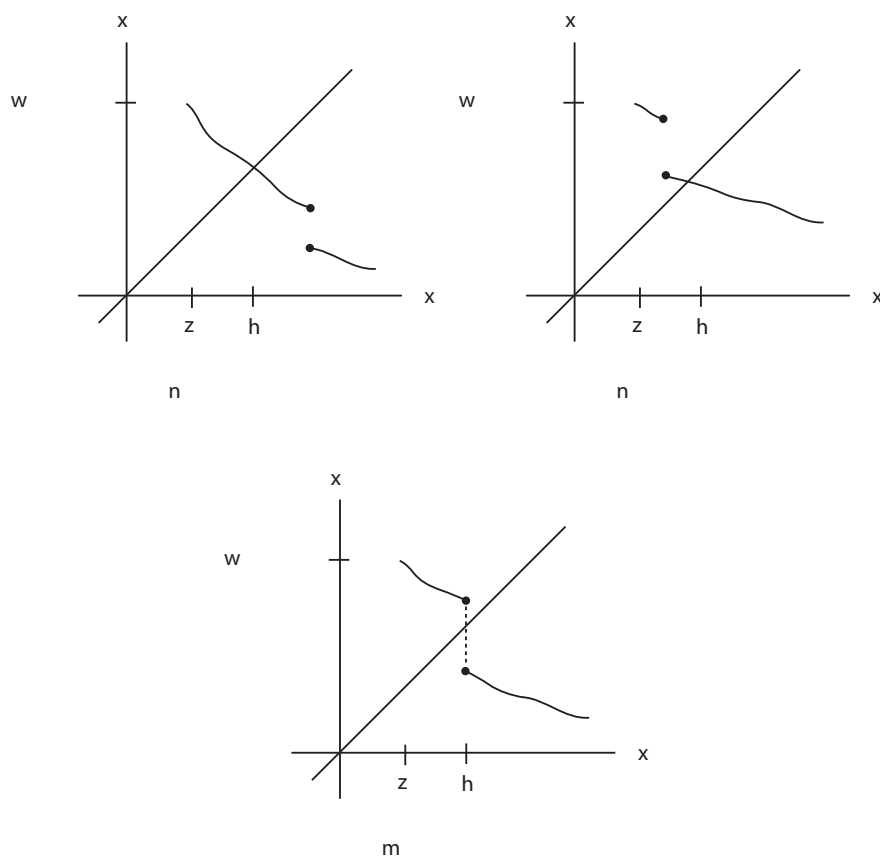


Figure 13: Existence and uniqueness

and thus we have

$$\begin{aligned}
 W(\pi^*, \bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*]}{1 - \delta} &\geq \frac{w(\hat{x}) + \beta - \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*]}{1 - \delta(1 - F(\bar{y} - \hat{x}))} \\
 &\geq \frac{w(\hat{x}) + \beta - \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}]}{1 - \delta(1 - F(\bar{y} - \hat{x}))} \\
 &> 0,
 \end{aligned}$$

where the second inequality follows from  $x^*(\bar{y}) \leq \hat{x}$ , and the third from (C3). Thus, the net value of office is positive, a contradiction. We conclude that the net value of office is indeed positive in equilibrium, and the first order condition implies that optimal policies are strictly greater than the ideal policy  $\hat{x}$ . By (C4), this implies that given any equilibrium  $\pi^*$ , the politician has at most two optimal policies, and

then uniqueness follows from above arguments. Continuity follows from standard arguments.

We next confirm the intuitive result that in equilibrium, politicians become worse off as voters become more demanding.

**Proposition 6.4** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure moral hazard, assume (C1)–(C4). Then for any finite cutoff  $\bar{y} \in \mathbb{R}$ , the politicians' indirect utility,  $W(\bar{y}) \equiv W(\pi^*(\bar{y}), \bar{y})$ , is decreasing in  $\bar{y}$ .*

To prove the proposition, suppose that for  $y' < y''$ , we have  $W(y') < W(y'')$ . We write  $\pi' = \pi^*(y')$  and  $\pi'' = \pi^*(y'')$ . Note that the expected utility from  $\pi'$  is less than the expected utility from  $\pi''$ , i.e.,  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi'] < \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi'']$ ; otherwise, the politicians' objective function for  $(\pi', y')$  exceeds that for  $(\pi'', y'')$  for all values of  $x$ , contradicting  $W(y') < W(y'')$ . It follows that

$$W(\pi'', y'') - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi'']}{1-\delta} > W(\pi', y') - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi']}{1-\delta},$$

and therefore

$$[W(\pi'', y'') - W(\pi'', y')] + [W(\pi'', y') - W(\pi', y')] > \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi'']}{1-\delta} - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi']}{1-\delta}.$$

Since  $W(\pi'', y'') < W(\pi'', y')$ , this implies

$$W(\pi'', y') - W(\pi', y') > \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi'']}{1-\delta} - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi']}{1-\delta}. \quad (24)$$

Now let  $\tilde{x}$  satisfy the Bellman equation for  $(\pi'', y')$ . Rewriting (24) as

$$W(\pi'', y') - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi'']}{1-\delta} > W(\pi', y') - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi']}{1-\delta},$$

it follows that  $\tilde{x} > x^*(y')$ . Note that

$$\begin{aligned} & W(\pi'', y') - W(\pi', y') \\ &= w(\tilde{x}) + \delta \left[ (1 - F(y' - \tilde{x}))(W(\pi'', y') + \beta) + F(y' - \tilde{x}) \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi'']}{1-\delta} \right] \\ & \quad - w(x^*(y')) - \delta \left[ (1 - F(y' - x^*(y')))(W(\pi', y') + \beta) \right. \\ & \quad \left. + F(y' - x^*(y')) \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi']}{1-\delta} \right]. \end{aligned}$$

Using  $\hat{x} < x^*(y') < \tilde{x}$  and  $W(\pi', y') + \beta > \frac{1}{1-\delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi']$ , this implies

$$\begin{aligned} W(\pi'', y') - W(\pi', y') &< \delta(1 - F(y' - \tilde{x}))(W(\pi'', y') - W(\pi', y')) \\ &+ \delta F(y' - \tilde{x}) \left[ \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi'']}{1-\delta} - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi']}{1-\delta} \right]. \end{aligned}$$

Simplifying, this is

$$W(\pi'', y') - W(\pi', y') < \left( \frac{F(y' - \tilde{x})}{1 - \delta + \delta F(y' - \tilde{x})} \right) \left[ \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi'']}{1-\delta} - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi']}{1-\delta} \right],$$

and since the coefficient in parentheses is strictly between zero and one, this contradicts (24). This establishes the monotonicity result.

To this point, we have taken the cutoff  $\bar{y}$  as exogenously fixed, but we can endogenize  $\bar{y}$  by allowing voters to set this cutoff optimally, i.e., voters solve

$$\max_{\bar{y}} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*(\bar{y})].$$

It is important to note that increasing the cutoff has two effects. First, there is a direct effect on the probability of re-election for any given policy choice  $x$ ; diagrammatically, this has the effect of shifting the politicians' constraint to the right. Second, there is an indirect effect on the net value of office,  $W(\pi^*(\bar{y}), \bar{y}) - \frac{1}{1-\delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*(\bar{y})]$ , which can be positive or negative, which is reflected in the marginal rate of substitution of the politician's objective function  $U(x, r; \pi^*(\bar{y}))$ . These effects can in turn lead to a change in the equilibrium policies,  $x^*(\bar{y})$  and  $x_*(\bar{y})$ , and they can change the mixing probabilities over these policies.

Next, we note that the voters do indeed have an optimal cutoff, and we give a partial characterization in terms of first order conditions.

**Proposition 6.5** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure moral hazard, assume (C1)–(C4). Then there is an optimal cutoff for the voters, which solves*

$$\max_{\bar{y}} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*(\bar{y})],$$

and for every optimal cutoff  $y^*$ , if  $x^*(\cdot)$  and  $x_*(\cdot)$  are differentiable at  $y^*$  and satisfy the second order condition with strict inequality at  $y^*$ , if  $r^*(\cdot)$  is differentiable at  $y^*$ , and if  $W(\cdot)$  is differentiable at  $y^*$ , then

$$\frac{dr^*}{dy}(y^*)[\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x^*] - \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x_*]] = \alpha^* \frac{d\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x^*]}{dx} + \alpha_* \frac{d\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x_*]}{dx},$$

where

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha^* &= r^*(y^*) \cdot \frac{\delta f'(y^* - x^*)\Delta(y^*) + \delta f(y^* - x^*)\Delta'(y^*)}{w''(y^*) - \delta f'(y^* - x^*)\Delta(y^*)} \\ \alpha_* &= (1 - r^*(y^*)) \cdot \frac{\delta f'(y^* - x_*)\Delta(y^*) + \delta f(y^* - x_*)\Delta'(y^*)}{w''(y^*) - \delta f'(y^* - x_*)\Delta(y^*)} \\ \Delta(\bar{y}) &= W(\bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*(\bar{y})]}{1 - \delta} \\ x^* &= x^*(y^*) \\ x_* &= x_*(y^*).\end{aligned}$$

Recall the first order condition for the politicians' optimization problem:  $x^*(\bar{y})$  and  $x_*(\bar{y})$  solve

$$w'(x) + f(\bar{y} - x)\delta \left[ W(\bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*(\bar{y})]}{1 - \delta} \right] = 0.$$

For existence of an optimal cutoff, fix any  $\bar{y}$ . Recall that the term in brackets above is positive by Proposition 6.3, so that  $\hat{x} < x_*(\bar{y})$ . Note that, as in the proof of Proposition 3.7, equilibrium policies are bounded above by any policy  $\bar{x}$  such that  $w(\hat{x}) > w(\bar{x}) + \frac{\delta}{1-\delta}[w(\bar{x}) + \beta]$ . Now consider arbitrarily low values of the cutoff, and note that  $f(\bar{y} - x^*(y)) \rightarrow 0$  as  $|y| \rightarrow \infty$ . From the first order condition, this implies that  $w'(x^*(y)) \rightarrow 0$  as  $|y| \rightarrow \infty$ , which implies that  $x^*(y) \rightarrow \hat{x}$ . Thus, we can choose a sufficiently large interval  $[y_L, y_H]$  such that for all  $\bar{y}$  outside the interval, we have  $x^*(\bar{y}) < x_*(\bar{y})$ , which implies  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*(\bar{y})] < \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi^*(\bar{y})]$ . Thus, we can restrict the optimal cutoff problem of the voter to the compact set  $[y_L, y_H]$ , and by continuity of the objective function, a solution exists.

To deduce the necessary condition, we insert  $x^*(\bar{y})$  into the first order condition and differentiate at  $y^*$  to obtain

$$\begin{aligned}w''(x^*)\frac{dx^*}{d\bar{y}}(y^*) + \delta f'(y^* - x^*)\left(1 - \frac{dx^*}{d\bar{y}}(y^*)\right) \left[ W(y^*) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x^*]}{1 - \delta} \right] \\ + \delta f(y^* - x^*) \left[ W'(y^*) - \frac{1}{1 - \delta} \frac{d}{dx} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x^*] \frac{dx^*}{d\bar{y}}(y^*) \right] \\ = 0.\end{aligned}$$

Solving for  $\frac{dx^*}{d\bar{y}}(y^*)$ , we find that

$$\frac{dx^*}{d\bar{y}}(y^*) = \frac{-\delta f'(y^* - x^*)\Delta(y^*) - \delta f(y^* - x^*)\Delta'(y^*)}{w''(x^*) - \delta f'(y^* - x^*)\Delta(y^*)},$$

and similarly for  $\frac{dx_*^*}{dy}(y^*)$ . Note that since the second order condition holds strictly, the denominator of the above expression is negative. Now turning to the voters' maximization problem,

$$\max_{\bar{y}} r^*(\bar{y})\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x^*(\bar{y})] + (1 - r^*(\bar{y}))\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x_*(\bar{y})],$$

the first order condition is

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{dr^*}{d\bar{y}}(y^*)[\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x^*] - \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x_*]] + r^*(y^*)\frac{d\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x^*]}{dx}\frac{dx^*}{d\bar{y}}(y^*) \\ + (1 - r^*(y^*))\frac{d\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x_*]}{dx}\frac{dx_*}{d\bar{y}}(y^*) = 0. \end{aligned}$$

Substituting the above expressions for  $\frac{dx^*}{d\bar{y}}$  and  $\frac{dx_*}{d\bar{y}}$ , we obtain the desired result.

The characterization in Proposition 6.5 has an implication for the possibility that the optimal cutoff induces the office holder to choose policies below  $y^*$ , shifted by the mode of  $f(\cdot)$ , which we denote  $\hat{z}$ . Suppose that in the equilibrium induced by an optimal cutoff  $y^*$ , the optimal policies of the politician both fall below  $y^* - \hat{z}$ , i.e.,  $y^* - x^*(y^*) > \hat{z}$ . Because the second order condition holds strictly at  $x^*(y^*)$ , it follows that

$$w''(y^*) - \delta f'(y^* - x^*(y^*))\Delta(y^*) < 0,$$

and by the MRLP,  $f(\cdot)$  is single-peaked, so  $f'(y^* - x^*(y^*)) \leq 0$ . Let us strengthen this slightly to assume that the derivative of  $f(\cdot)$  is strictly negative when evaluated at outcomes greater than the mode. Moreover, we have shown that  $\Delta(y^*) > 0$  and  $W'(y^*) \leq 0$ , and it follows that  $\alpha^*$  and  $\alpha_*$  are positive. Then the characterization implies

$$\frac{dr^*}{dy}(y^*)[\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x^*] - \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x_*]] > 0.$$

That is, an increase in the cutoff from the optimal level  $y^*$  decreases the effort exerted by politicians at both optimal policies, and so it must be that voters are compensated by a shift in probability from the lower optimal policy to the greater one. In particular, we must have  $x^*(y^*) > x_*(y^*)$ . We conclude that if the cutoff  $y^*$  induces an equilibrium in pure policy strategies, then it must be that the politicians' policy choice exceeds the mode of  $f(\cdot)$ . Intuitively, assuming  $f(\cdot)$  is symmetric about zero, this implies that the voter optimally sets a relatively low bar, and politicians optimally respond by choosing policy that exceeds that bar: it is better to encourage the politician to jump a lower bar, rather than demoralize them by setting a bar that is difficult to achieve.

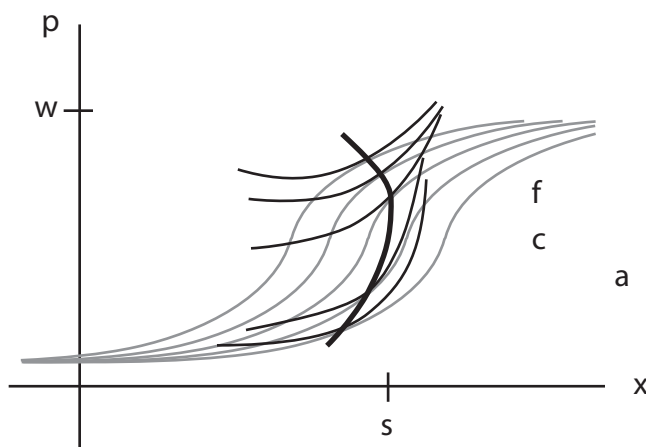


Figure 14: Locus of policy choices

Geometrically, we can imagine the optimal cutoff problem of the voter by increasing the cutoff and sweeping out the policy choices of politicians; this is the dark locus of points in Figure 14. The maximum effort induced by choice of cutoff corresponds to a solution of the voters' problem. Note that as  $\bar{y}$  varies, so does the value of office for politicians: when the value of office  $W(\bar{y}) - \frac{1}{1-\delta}\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x^*(\bar{y})]$  decreases, the politicians' indifference curves become steeper. Here, we depict the case in which politicians choose a single policy  $x^*$  with probability one given the optimal cutoff, and consistent with the first order characterization, this means that  $x^*$  exceeds the cutoff, and the pair  $(x^*, y^*)$  lies on the constraint to the northeast of the inflection point.

We have not yet considered the possibility of responsive democracy in the infinite-horizon model of pure moral hazard: Proposition 6.5 establishes that the optimal cutoff (indeed, any cutoff) induces politicians to exert positive effort, but the result is silent on the level of the policy choices that can be attained. The next proposition establishes a *strong responsiveness result* when politicians are substantially office-motivated: when the office benefit  $\beta$  is large, the equilibrium policy choices of the politicians increase without bound for an arbitrarily fixed cutoff. Obviously, the result is then reinforced if the cutoff is set optimally.

**Proposition 6.6** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure moral hazard, assume (C1)–(C4). Fix the finite cutoff  $\bar{y} \in \mathbb{R}$ , and let the office benefit  $\beta$  be arbitrarily large. Then the politicians' policy choice increases without bound, i.e.,*

$$\lim_{\beta \rightarrow \infty} x_*(\bar{y}) = \infty.$$

To prove the proposition, it suffices to show that there is no sequence of equilibria such that the least optimal policy  $x_*(\bar{y})$  converges to a finite  $\bar{x} < \infty$  as office benefit becomes large. We simply consult the first order condition,

$$w'(x) = -\delta f(\bar{y} - x) \left[ W(x, \bar{y}) + \beta - \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x]}{1 - \delta} \right].$$

For such a sequence, the left-hand side of the equation converges to  $w'(\bar{x})$ , while the right-hand side diverges to negative infinity, a contradiction.

In contrast to the positive result on responsiveness in the model with no term limit, the nature of equilibria are qualitatively different when office holders are subject to a term limit: voters cannot credibly commit to a finite cutoff, as an office holder in her final term of office is known to shirk, whereas a newly elected challenger would exert positive effort. This time consistency problem causes equilibria with finite cutoffs to unravel, leaving only the trivial equilibria in which voters always re-elect the incumbent or always elect the challenger, and thus office holders always shirk by choosing their ideal policy.

We now assume that politicians can hold office for at most  $K$  terms, and we allow voters to use cutoffs  $\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1}$  that depend on the incumbent's term of office; that is, if the incumbent has completed their  $t$ th term, then she is re-elected if and only if the realized outcome that period satisfies  $y \geq \bar{y}_t$ . Let  $V_t^I(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1})$  denote the voters' expected discounted payoff from re-electing the incumbent after her  $t$ th term of office, and let  $V^C(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1})$  be the payoff of electing a challenger. We say  $(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1})$  is *time consistent* if for all  $t = 1, \dots, K-1$ , the cutoff never dictates that the electorate votes against their preferences, i.e.,  $\bar{y}_t > -\infty$  implies

$$V^C(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1}) \geq V_t^I(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1}),$$

and  $\bar{y}_t < \infty$  implies

$$V_t^I(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1}) \geq V^C(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1}).$$

Note that if  $\bar{y}_t$  is finite, then time consistency implies that voters are indifferent between the incumbent and challenger, as the realized outcome can lead to a vote for either candidate.

**Proposition 6.7** *In the infinite-horizon model of pure moral hazard with finite term limit, assume (C1)–(C4). If  $(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1})$  is time consistent, then for all  $t$ ,  $\bar{y}_t \in \{-\infty, \infty\}$ , and in equilibrium politicians always choose  $\hat{x}$ .*



To see the proposition, suppose  $(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1})$  is time consistent but some cutoff is finite, and let  $\bar{y}_t$  be the highest indexed finite cutoff. Since the office holder's policy choices in her  $t$ th or later terms of office do not affect her re-election chances, the politician simply chooses her ideal policy in all remaining terms. Letting  $(\pi_1^*, \dots, \pi_K^*)$  denote equilibrium mixed policy choices of politicians during their tenure in office, we then have  $\pi_{t+1}^*(\hat{x}) = \dots = \pi_K^*(\hat{x}) = 1$ . Then we can write the payoff of re-electing the incumbent after their  $t$ th term as

$$V_t^I(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1}) = \alpha \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}]}{1-\delta} + (1-\alpha)V^C(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1}),$$

where  $\alpha$  is between zero and one. By time consistency and  $\bar{y}_t$  finite, the left-hand side is equal to the continuation value of a challenger, and thus

$$V^C(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1}) = \frac{1}{1-\delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}]. \quad (25)$$

By a first-order argument similar to that for Proposition 6.5, the politician in her  $t$ th term of office exerts positive effort, i.e.,  $\pi_t^*(\hat{x}) = 0$ . This implies  $V_{t-1}^I(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1}) > V^C(\bar{y}_1, \dots, \bar{y}_{K-1})$ , and time consistency implies that  $\bar{y}_{t-1} = -\infty$ . That is, the value of the incumbent in term  $t-1$  strictly exceeds the payoff of a challenger, so voters always re-elect. Thus, in term  $t-2$ , the value of the incumbent again strictly exceeds the payoff of a challenger, so voters always re-elect. This argument carries back to the first term of office, and we conclude that voters always re-elect incumbents in the first  $t-1$  terms of office and that politicians exert positive effort in term  $t$ . But then the payoff of a challenger strictly exceeds the discounted expected utility from the ideal policy  $\hat{x}$ , contradicting (25).

## 6.2 One-sided learning

Due to difficult theoretical issues related to updating of voter beliefs, the literature on infinite-horizon problems is small, and existence of stationary electoral equilibrium is problematic. Banks and Sundaram (1993) prove existence in history-dependent trigger strategies, which we discuss at the end of this subsection. Banks and Sundaram (1998) establish existence in the infinite-horizon model with a two-period term limit, which we take up in the next subsection, but the question in the model with no term limits is open. Schwabe (2011) considers a simplified version of the model with no term limits in which there are two politician types and the behavior of the bad type is exogenously fixed; he shows existence of equilibria in reputation-dependent cutoffs, which allow for greater history dependence than stationarity.

We discuss some of the technical difficulties presented in a version of the model with two types, and we provide a qualified responsiveness result: as citizens become patient, the (normalized) continuation value of a challenger converges to the expected utility from the ideal policy of the high type, assuming equilibria exist. The form of this responsiveness result differs from Proposition 3.8 for the two-period model, where the strategic structure of the game implies that office-motivated politicians' effort levels increase without bound; this issue does not arise in Proposition 5.6 for the model of pure adverse selection, where the ideal policy of the "best type" of politician is the median ideal point. We maintain assumptions (C1)–(C3), but we make only expositional use of (C4) in the present subsection.

The focus on monotonic, differential equilibria implies that election outcomes are characterized by a cutoff, as in the two-period model of Subsection 3.4 and in the pure moral hazard model of Subsection 6.1. In contrast to previous analyses, we now explicitly write the equilibrium cutoff and policy strategies,  $y^*(b)$  and  $\pi_j^*(b)$ , as functions of voter beliefs. We write  $\mu_T(b, y)$  for the voters' beliefs about an office holder's type conditional on policy outcome  $y$  and given prior beliefs  $b$ . Since all policy outcomes are on the path of play, Bayes rule pins down the beliefs of voters given  $\sigma$ , and we therefore summarize a stationary electoral equilibrium by the strategy profile  $\sigma$ , leaving beliefs implicit.

Given strategies  $\sigma$  and beliefs  $b$  about the incumbent's type, we let  $W_j(b|\sigma)$  denote the value of the type  $j$  politician's optimization problem,  $V^C(\sigma)$  denote the continuation value of a challenger, and  $V^I(b|\sigma)$  denote the continuation value of re-electing the incumbent. These uniquely satisfy the following functional equations: for all  $b$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}
W_j(b|\sigma) &= \max_{x \in X} w_j(x) + \delta \left[ \int_{y \geq y^*(b)} [W_j(\mu_T(b, y)|\sigma) + \beta] f(y-x) dy \right. \\
&\quad \left. + F(y^*(b) - x) V^C(\sigma) \right] \\
V^C(\sigma) &= \sum_j p_j \sum_x \left[ \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] + \delta \left[ \int_{y \geq y^*(b)} [V^I(\mu_T(p, y)|\sigma) + \beta] f(y-x) dy \right. \right. \\
&\quad \left. \left. + F(y^*(b) - x) V^C(\sigma) \right] \right] \pi_j^*(x|p) \\
V^I(b|\sigma) &= \sum_j b_j \sum_x \left[ \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] + \delta \left[ \int_{y \geq y^*(b)} [V^I(\mu_T(b, y)|\sigma) + \beta] f(y-x) dy \right. \right. \\
&\quad \left. \left. + F(y^*(b) - x) V^C(\sigma) \right] \right] \pi_j^*(x|b).
\end{aligned}$$

The right-hand side of the type  $j$  politicians' Bellman equation is evidently differ-

entiable (and therefore continuous) in the policy choice  $x$ , and so an optimal choice exists and satisfies the first order condition

$$w'_j(x) = \delta \left[ \int_{y \geq y^*(b)} [W_j(\mu_T(b, y) | \sigma) + \beta] f'(y - x) dy + f(y^*(b) - x) V^C(\sigma) \right] \quad (26)$$

The indifference condition determining the voters' cutoff is

$$V^I(\mu_T(k|b, y) | \sigma) = V^C(\sigma),$$

given that the voters' prior beliefs at the beginning of the term are  $b$ .

To avoid perverse incentives of office holders, we reformulate (C3) as follows,

$$(C3) \quad w_1(\hat{x}_1) + \beta > \mathbb{E}[u(y) | \hat{x}_n],$$

which means that a first term politician prefers to remain in office, even if she can return to the electorate and in all future periods, and outcomes are determined by the ideal policy of the highest type. We assume provisionally that  $(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) \leq \mathbb{E}[u(y) | \hat{x}_n]$ , and we will see that  $\mathbb{E}[u(y) | \hat{x}_n]$  does indeed bound the (normalized) continuation value of a challenger in equilibrium, so the new (C3) means that all politicians are in principle interested in re-election. By (C3), the right-hand side of the first order condition in (26) is positive, and it follows that for arbitrary cutoff and continuation value, a politician exerts positive effort in the first term. These claims are established in the next proposition.

**Proposition 6.8** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning, assume (C1)–(C3). Then for all  $b$ , all functions  $y^*(\cdot)$ , and all  $\sigma$  such that  $(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) \leq \mathbb{E}[u(y) | \hat{x}_n]$ , we have*

$$\int_{y \geq y^*(b)} [W_j(\mu_T(b, y) | \sigma) + \beta] f'(y - x) dy + f(y^*(b) - x) V^C(\sigma) > 0.$$

To prove the proposition, it suffices to show that for all  $b$ , we have  $W_j(b | \sigma) + \beta > V^C(\sigma)$ . To simplify the proof, assume there is some  $\underline{b}$  that minimizes  $W_j(\underline{b} | \sigma)$ .<sup>20</sup> Then because a type  $j$  politician can always choose the ideal policy  $\hat{x}_j$ , we have

$$W_j(\underline{b} | \sigma) + \beta \geq w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \delta \left[ \int_{y \geq y^*(\underline{b})} [W_j(\mu_T(\underline{b}, y) | \sigma) + \beta] f(y - \hat{x}_j) dy \right]$$

<sup>20</sup>In general, we can work with beliefs for which the infimum of the value function is approximated.

$$\begin{aligned}
& +F(y^*(\underline{b}) - \hat{x}_j)V^C(\sigma) \Big] \\
\geq & w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \delta \left[ (1 - F(y^*(\underline{b}) - \hat{x}_j)[W_j(\underline{b}|\sigma) + \beta] \right. \\
& \left. +F(y^*(\underline{b}) - \hat{x}_j)V^C(\sigma) \right].
\end{aligned}$$

This implies that

$$\begin{aligned}
W_j(\underline{b}|\sigma) + \beta & \geq \frac{w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \delta F(y^*(\underline{b}) - \hat{x}_j)V^C(\sigma)}{1 - \delta(1 - F(y^*(\underline{b}) - \hat{x}_j))} \\
& > \frac{(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) + \delta F(y^*(\underline{b}) - \hat{x}_j)V^C(\sigma)}{1 - \delta(1 - F(y^*(\underline{b}) - \hat{x}_j))} \\
& = V^C(\sigma),
\end{aligned}$$

where the strict inequality uses (C3) and  $(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) \leq \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ . Since the net value of office is minimized at  $\underline{b}$ , this establishes the result.

Dependence of  $W_j$  and  $V^I$  on beliefs  $b$  introduces significant complications over the pure moral hazard model, reflecting the possibility that voters learn about an incumbent's type as the game evolves. Of note, voter beliefs become a state variable in the dynamic electoral game, in which politicians and voters condition their actions directly on  $b$ , and the transition on beliefs depends on the politicians' choices. Such dependence creates the possibility that strategies and continuation values are discontinuous in beliefs—it may be that  $x_j^*(b)$  and  $x_{*,j}(b)$  jump in response to a discontinuity in  $y^*(b)$ , and reciprocally, that the cutoff jumps in response to a discontinuity in policy choices—with ensuing difficulties for equilibrium existence. Furthermore, the updated belief  $\mu_T(b, y)$  is a highly non-linear function, and the composition  $W_j(\mu_T(b, y)|\sigma)$  is potentially badly behaved. Finally, the transition on the state variable  $b$ , which is given by the Bayesian posterior  $\mu_T(b, y)$ , depends implicitly on strategies  $\sigma$ , i.e., it is endogenous. These technical issues combine to present formidable challenges to the analysis of the general model. To provide some insight into the model, we specialize to the model with two types, which we refer to as the *infinite horizon model of moral hazard and adverse selection with two types*.

### Digression on existence

To facilitate the discussion of equilibrium existence, we temporarily simplify further by assuming a maximum feasible policy,  $\bar{x}$ , by assuming one type has zero cost, and by assuming (C4). This means that the “good” type has essentially the same preferences as voters and that the policy choice of such politicians is pinned

down at the maximum, i.e., the unique optimal policy for all voter beliefs is  $x_2^*(b) = \bar{x}$ , so the main question concerns the policy choice of the lower type. Assuming for the sake of discussion that the payoff from an incumbent  $V^I(b|\sigma)$  is increasing in the probability  $b_2$  of the high type, the voters' cutoff is the solution to  $\mu_T(2, y) = p_2$ , i.e., the cutoff is such that conditional on  $y^*(b)$ , the probability the incumbent is the high type is just equal to the prior probability. This means that  $y^*(b)$  solves the equation

$$p_2 = \frac{b_2 f(y - \bar{x})}{b_1 \sum_x f(y - x) \pi_1(x|b) + b_2 f(y - \bar{x})},$$

or after manipulating,

$$\frac{b_1 \sum_x f(y - x) \pi_1(x|b)}{b_2 f(y - \bar{x})} = \frac{p_1}{p_2}.$$

For the special case in which  $\pi_1(b)$  is degenerate on a single policy  $x_1^*(b) < \bar{x}$  and densities are normal with mean zero, this simplifies further to

$$y^*(b) = \frac{\ln\left(\frac{p_1 b_2}{p_2 b_1}\right)}{2(x_1^*(b) - \bar{x})} + \frac{x_1^*(b) + \bar{x}}{2}.$$

We see that even in this very special case of the model, the cutoff is unbounded, non-linear in policy choices, and ostensibly non-monotonic in beliefs. The exception is in the first term of office, where  $b = p$ , in which case the cutoff reduces to the midpoint between the maximum policy and the choice of the type 1 politicians.

Assuming that  $\pi_1$  places positive probability on policies strictly less than  $\bar{x}$ , the MLRP implies that the above equation for the voters' cutoff has a unique solution, say  $\zeta(b|\pi_1)$ . Then we can rewrite the Bellman equation for the type 1 politicians as parameterized by the policy strategy  $\pi_1$ , as in

$$\begin{aligned} W_1(b|\pi_1) = & \max_{x \in X} w_j(x) + \delta \left[ \int_{y \geq \zeta(b|\pi_1)} [W_1(\mu_T(b, y)|\pi_1) + \beta] f(y - x) dy \right. \\ & \left. + F(\zeta(b|\pi_1) - x) V^C(\pi_1) \right], \end{aligned}$$

where we use a similar convention in writing  $V^C(\pi_1)$ . The right-hand side of the Bellman equation is continuous in the policy choice  $x$ , so a maximizer exists for each  $b$ , but note that the Bellman equation itself depends on  $\pi_1$  through the cutoff and (implicitly) through Bayesian updating. Then  $\pi_1$  corresponds to an equilibrium if for all  $b$ , the distribution  $\pi_1(b)$  places probability one on solutions to the politician's Bellman equation.

To discuss the equilibrium existence issue in more detail, we focus on the case in which the type 1 politicians use a pure strategy, which we represent by a policy function  $x_1(\cdot)$  that specifies a policy choice  $x_1(b)$  as a function of the voters' beliefs; the technical issues are equally germane to the case of mixed strategy equilibria. In line with the above observations, we pursue the following route to existence: given a policy strategy  $x_1(\cdot)$ , we derive a new policy strategy  $\tilde{x}_1(\cdot)$  from the solutions to the Bellman equation; *if* these functions can be restricted a priori to a compact space, and *if* the mapping  $x_1(\cdot) \mapsto \tilde{x}_1(\cdot)$  is continuous, then it has a fixed point; and this fixed point yields an equilibrium.

A number of remarks are in order. First, our ability to restrict policy strategies to a compact space in a strong topology hinges on deriving an a priori limitation on the variation of these policy functions. In the literature on dynamic games, this is normally done by imposing structure on the exogenously given transition probability on the state variable (in this case,  $b$ ), but this course is not available in the current setting: the transition on beliefs is dictated by Bayes rule and therefore itself depends on the strategy used by type 1 politicians. Second, continuity of the fixed point mapping hinges critically on joint continuity of the right-hand side of the Bellman equation on the policy choice  $x$  and the policy strategy  $x_1(\cdot)$  itself. Although we have noted continuity with respect to  $x$ , the joint continuity condition is much more demanding and depends on the notion of convergence applied to policy strategies. Third, we do not have conditions under which optimal policies are ensured to be unique, so the mapping suggested above relies on taking a selection from the correspondence of optimal policies. This correspondence may not have convex values, and it might not even be possible to find a continuous selection. Because voters will not be indifferent between the politicians' optimal policies, this multiplicity would normally necessitate mixing by the type 1 politicians. Then the domain of the fixed point argument will not be functions  $x_j(\cdot)$  from beliefs to policies, but rather mappings  $\pi_j(\cdot)$  from beliefs to probability distributions over policies. We consider in this discussion the optimistic case in which this problem does not arise.<sup>21</sup>

In the current setting, we can circumvent some of these issues by accepting discontinuities in the strategy of type 1 politicians, sacrificing uniform convergence, and giving the space of policy functions the weak\* topology as a subset of  $L^\infty([0, 1])$ , where we now view  $x_1^*(b_2)$  as a function of the probability of type 2 alone.<sup>22</sup> This space of functions is indeed compact. To avoid discontinuities in

<sup>21</sup>Fourth, the standard topology on the space of such mappings delivers compactness, called the "narrow topology," is too weak to ensure the joint continuity condition needed for the fixed point argument.

<sup>22</sup>This means that a sequence  $\{x_1^k(\cdot)\}$  of policy strategies converges to  $x_1(\cdot)$  if and only if for every integrable function  $g: [0, 1] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ , the integrals  $\int g(b_2)x_1^k(b_2)db_2$  converge to  $\int g(b_2)x_1(b_2)db_2$ .

voter payoffs, we simplify the model further so that a politician receives a zero payoff when removed from office, whereby the type 1 politicians' Bellman equation reduces to

$$W_1(b|x_1(\cdot)) = \max_{x \in X} w_1(x) + \delta \int_{y \geq \zeta(b|x_1(\cdot))} [W_1(\mu_T(b, y)|x_1(\cdot)) + \beta] f(y-x) dy.$$

Then, given a policy strategy  $x_1(\cdot)$ , we can simply choose the greatest optimal policy for each belief  $b$ , giving us a new policy strategy  $\tilde{x}_1(\cdot)$ , which will belong to  $L^\infty([0, 1])$ . The last stumbling block to existence—which appears fundamental—is the lack of joint continuity of the mapping from  $x_1(\cdot)$  to  $\tilde{x}_1(\cdot)$ , stemming from the poor pointwise properties of weak\* convergence.

To expand on this point, let  $x'$  and  $x''$  be any two policies, and let  $\{x_1^k(\cdot)\}$  be a sequence of policy strategies that alternates between  $x'$  and  $x''$  at an increasing rate; Figure 15 depicts the initial strategies in the sequence, which is known in analysis as the Rademacher sequence. This sequence converges in the weak\* topology to the strategy  $x_1(\cdot)$  that always chooses the midpoint  $(x' + x'')/2$ . For almost all beliefs  $b$ , the politicians' choice switches between  $x'$  and  $x''$  infinitely often, and so the current period payoffs  $w_1(x_1^k(b))$  along the sequence will not converge to the payoff from  $(x' + x'')/2$ . Moreover, the voters' cutoff switches between  $y'(b)$  and  $y''(b)$  infinitely often along the sequence, where in the normal case these cutoffs solve

$$\frac{b_1 f(y-x')}{b_2 f(y-\bar{x})} = \frac{p_1}{p_2} \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{b_1 f(y-x'')}{b_2 f(y-\bar{x})} = \frac{p_1}{p_2},$$

respectively. Clearly, these cutoffs will not generally converge to the cutoff for  $x_1(\cdot)$ . Finally, dependence of the Bayesian posterior  $\mu_T(b, y)$  on the politicians' policy strategy is also problematic. Note that conditional on an outcome  $y$ , the voters' updated beliefs switch infinitely often between

$$b'_2 = \frac{b_2 f(y-\bar{x})}{b_1 f(y-x') + b_2 f(y-\bar{x})} \quad \text{and} \quad b''_2 = \frac{b_2 f(y-\bar{x})}{b_1 f(y-x'') + b_2 f(y-\bar{x})}$$

along the sequence, and these updated beliefs will not converge to the updated belief for  $x_1(\cdot)$ . These considerations appear to lead inevitably to a failure of joint continuity and the impracticality of the fixed point approach. In sum, existence of stationary electoral equilibrium is a thorny issue.

### End of digression

Leaving existence aside, it is instructive to consider the incentives of politicians to exert effort as office benefit becomes large in the two-type model, *assuming equilibria exist*. We first note that in equilibrium, it is possible for a first-term

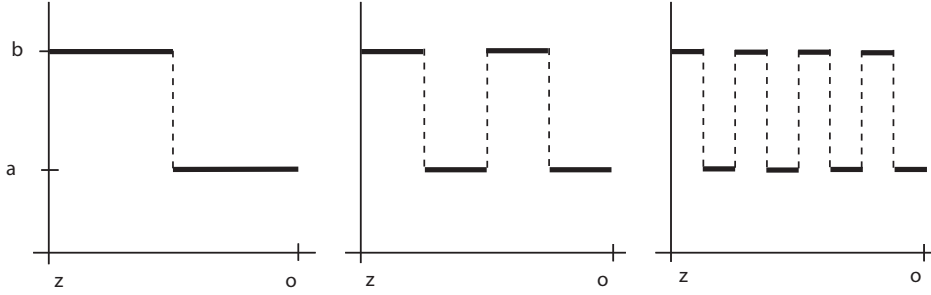


Figure 15: Problematic policy strategies

office holder to be re-elected. In contrast to the subsequent analysis, this minimal step does not rely on the assumption of two types.

**Proposition 6.9** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning, assume (C1) and (C2) hold. In every stationary electoral equilibrium  $\sigma$ , we have  $y^*(p) < \infty$ .*

Suppose that in equilibrium,  $y^*(p) = \infty$ . Because first-term office holders cannot be re-elected, every type chooses her ideal policy, so the (normalized) continuation value of a challenger is  $(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) = \sum_j p_j \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j]$ . Since  $\hat{x}_n$  exceeds all other ideal policies, it follows that for sufficiently large outcomes  $y$ , the voters' posterior over the incumbent's type becomes arbitrarily close to degenerate on type  $n$ . That is,  $\mu_T(n|p, y) \rightarrow 1$  as  $y \rightarrow \infty$ . Then the voters' expected discounted payoff from re-electing the incumbent satisfies

$$\begin{aligned} V^I(\mu_T(p, y)|\sigma) &\geq \mu_T(n|p, y)\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n] + (1 - \mu_T(n|p, y))\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] + \delta V^C(\sigma) \\ &\rightarrow \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n] + \delta V^C(\sigma) \\ &> V^C(\sigma) \end{aligned}$$

as  $y$  becomes large, but then the incumbent is re-elected, i.e.,  $y \geq y^*(p)$ , a contradiction.

As another small step in understanding the two-type model, we note that the policy choices of office holders are always ordered strictly by type.

**Proposition 6.10** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning with two types, assume (C1) and (C2) hold. In every stationary electoral equilibrium  $\sigma$ , the type 1 politicians' policy choices are strictly less than the type 2 politicians', i.e., for all  $b$  and all  $x$  and  $z$ , if  $\pi_1^*(x|b) > 0$  and  $\pi_2^*(z|b) > 0$ , then  $x < z$ .*



To prove the result, first note that the first order condition for the office holder's optimization problem, with the fact that  $W_2(b|\sigma) > W_1(b|\sigma)$  for all beliefs, implies that  $x < z$ . Now suppose that the policy choices are equal. Then voters do not update their beliefs after observing the realized outcome  $y$ , so if  $V^I(b|\sigma) \geq V^C(\sigma)$ , then the incumbent is always re-elected; and if  $V^I(b|\sigma) < V^C(\sigma)$ , then the incumbent is never elected. In both cases, the office holder's optimal policy choice is to choose her ideal policy, so  $x = \hat{x}_1 < \hat{x}_2 = z$ , a contradiction. We conclude that the type 1 politicians' policy choice is strictly less than the type 2 politicians', as desired.

The next result establishes that in the context of the two-type model, the voters' continuation value of a challenger is bounded above by the discounted expected utility from the ideal policy of the highest type. A similar result is proved by Schwabe (2011) under the assumptions that the bad type of politician shirks and that the increment to the voter's utility from a good politician (independent of effort) is sufficiently small. This result has no parallel in the model of pure adverse selection in the spatial environment, where the ideal policy of the "best type" coincides with the ideal policy of the median voter. It also reveals a fundamental difference between the two-period and infinite-horizon models of moral hazard and adverse selection, as in the former model, the continuation value of a challenger increases without bound as politicians become office motivated. It is tempting to suppose that the strong responsiveness result carries over to the infinite-horizon model, but we find that the removal of the terminal period imposes constraints on the effectiveness of electoral incentives. An implication, with Proposition 6.8, is that the net value of office is indeed positive in equilibrium.

**Proposition 6.11** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning with two types, assume (C1)–(C3) hold. For all levels of office benefit  $\beta \geq 0$  and all discount factors  $\delta \in [0, 1)$ , in every stationary electoral equilibrium  $\sigma$ , the voters' continuation value of a challenger is no more than the expected discounted utility from the ideal policy of the type 2 politician, i.e.,*

$$V^C(\sigma) \leq \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2]}{1 - \delta}.$$

To prove the result, fix  $\beta \geq 0$  and  $\delta < 1$ , so that optimal policy choices can be bounded by an interval  $[0, \bar{x}]$ . By Proposition 6.9, we have  $y^*(p) < \infty$ , and by Proposition 6.10, we have  $x < z$  for all  $x$  and  $z$  with  $\pi_1^*(x|b) > 0$  and  $\pi_2^*(z) > 0$  and for all  $b$ . We claim that as  $b_2$  approaches one, the voters' cutoff decreases without bound, i.e.,  $y^*(b) \rightarrow -\infty$ . To see this, let  $\bar{y}(b)$  be the solution to

$$p_2 = \frac{b_2 \sum_x f(y-x)\pi_2(x|b)}{b_1 \sum_x f(y-x)\pi_1(x|b) + b_2 \sum_x f(y-x)\pi_2(x|b)},$$

which, with (C1) and (C2), is uniquely defined by Proposition 6.10. Therefore,  $\mu_T(b, \tilde{y}(b)) = p$ , which implies that  $V^I(b, \tilde{y}(b)|\sigma) = V^I(p|\sigma) = V^C(\sigma)$ . Because  $\sigma$  is deferential and monotonic, we then have  $y^*(b) \leq \tilde{y}(b)$ , so it suffices to show that  $\tilde{y}(b) \rightarrow -\infty$  as  $b_2 \rightarrow 1$ . By construction of  $\tilde{y}(b)$ , we have

$$\frac{b_2 \sum_x f(\tilde{y}(b) - x) \pi_2(x|b)}{b_1 \sum_x f(\tilde{y}(b) - x) \pi_1(x|b)} = \frac{p_2}{p_1},$$

and thus the likelihood ratio  $\frac{\sum_x f(\tilde{y}(b) - x) \pi_2(x|b)}{\sum_x f(\tilde{y}(b) - x) \pi_1(x|b)}$  must converge to zero. Because policy choices belong to a compact set, it follows that the values  $|\tilde{y}(b)|$  must be divergent. And if there is a subsequence such that  $\tilde{y}(b) \rightarrow \infty$ , then because  $f(\cdot)$  is single-peaked, using Proposition 6.10, we have

$$\frac{\sum_x f(\tilde{y}(b) - x) \pi_2(x|b)}{\sum_x f(\tilde{y}(b) - x) \pi_1(x|b)} \geq \frac{\sum_x f(\tilde{y}(b) - x) \pi_1(x|b)}{\sum_x f(\tilde{y}(b) - x) \pi_1(x|b)} = 1,$$

a contradiction. Thus,  $\tilde{y}(b) \rightarrow -\infty$ , as claimed.

Note that Bayesian updating  $\mu_T(b, y)$  becomes insensitive to the outcome  $y$  when the belief  $b$  is close to degenerate; in particular, as  $b_2 \rightarrow 1$ , the function  $W_j(\mu_T(b, y)|\sigma)$  becomes arbitrarily close to constant in  $y$ . Since  $y^*(b) \rightarrow -\infty$ , by the previous claim, this implies that the right-hand side of the type 2 politicians' first order condition in (26) converges to zero uniformly on  $[0, \bar{x}]$ . It follows that the policy choice of type 2 politicians converges to their ideal policy, i.e.,  $x_2^*(b) \rightarrow \hat{x}_2$  as  $b_2 \rightarrow 1$ . Moreover, the updated beliefs of the voters in the next term of office will be arbitrarily close to the initial  $b_2$  for all outcomes outside a set of arbitrarily small measure. By the same argument, the office holder's policy choice in her second term also converges to the ideal policy, and so on for an arbitrarily long horizon. Since voters are not perfectly patient ( $\delta < 1$ ), this implies that the expected payoff from re-electing the incumbent, conditional on the politician being type 2, converges to the discounted expected utility from the ideal policy, i.e.,  $V^I(b, 2|\sigma) \rightarrow \frac{1}{1-\delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2]$  as  $b_2 \rightarrow 1$ . We therefore have

$$V^C(\sigma) \leq V^I(b|\sigma) \leq \frac{b_1 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\bar{x}]}{1-\delta} + b_2 V^I(b, 2|\sigma) \rightarrow \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2]}{1-\delta}$$

as  $b_2 \rightarrow 1$ . We conclude that  $V^C(\sigma) \leq \frac{1}{1-\delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2]$ , as desired.

We can give a fairly loose lower bound on the continuation value of an incumbent for arbitrary parameters of the model. The proof recalls the principle of optimality for dynamic elections in Proposition 4.2: we argue that if the value fell below a certain level, then the median voter could use a non-stationary retention rule that increased her expected discounted payoff, an impossibility.

**Proposition 6.12** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning with two types, assume (C1)–(C3) hold. In every stationary electoral equilibrium  $\sigma$ , the voters' expected discounted payoff from re-electing an incumbent given beliefs  $b$  satisfies*

$$V^I(b|\sigma) \geq \frac{b_1 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1]}{1-\delta} + \frac{b_2 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2]}{1-\delta}.$$

To prove the proposition, let  $V^{I,k}(b|\sigma)$  denote the voters' expected payoff from re-electing the incumbent for  $k$  periods regardless of the outcome realization and then returning to the strategy  $\sigma$ , given that beliefs about the politician are initially  $b$ , and assuming that politicians continue to use their equilibrium policy strategies and voters continue to update their beliefs according to Bayes rule. At the beginning of the  $k$ th period, for all updated beliefs  $b^k$  about the incumbent's type, the expected payoff from re-electing the incumbent independently of the outcome realization is

$$\begin{aligned} & b_1^k \sum_x \left[ \int V^I(\mu_T(b^k, y), 1|\sigma) f(y-x) dy \right] \pi_1(x|b^k) \\ & + b_2^k \sum_x \left[ \int V^I(\mu_T(b^k, y), 2|\sigma) f(y-x) dy \right] \pi_2(x|b^k), \end{aligned}$$

while the expected payoff from following  $\sigma$  is

$$\begin{aligned} & b_1^k \sum_x \left[ \int_{y \geq y^*(b^k)} V^I(\mu_T(b^k, y), 1|\sigma) f(y-x) dy + F(y^*(b^k) - x) V^C(\sigma) \right] \pi_1(x|b^k) \\ & + b_2^k \sum_x \left[ \int_{y \geq y^*(b^k)} V^I(\mu_T(b^k, y), 2|\sigma) f(y-x) dy + F(y^*(b^k) - x) V^C(\sigma) \right] \pi_2(x|b^k). \end{aligned}$$

Note that for all  $y < y^*(b^k)$ , we have  $V^C(\sigma) > V^I(\mu_T(b^k, y)|\sigma)$ . It follows that the second expected payoff exceeds the first, and we conclude that  $V^{I,k-1}(b|\sigma) \geq V^{I,k}(b|\sigma)$ . Continuing this logic, we have

$$V^I(b|\sigma) \geq V^{I,1}(b|\sigma) \geq \dots \geq V^{I,k}(b|\sigma).$$

Moreover, since  $x \geq \hat{x}_j$  for each  $j = 1, 2$ , each  $b^j$ , and each  $x$  in the support of  $\pi_j(\cdot|b^j)$ , we have

$$V^{I,k}(b|\sigma) \geq \frac{(1-\delta^{k-1})[b_1 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] + b_2 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2]]}{1-\delta} + \frac{\delta^k \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1]}{1-\delta}.$$

Finally, taking the limit as  $k \rightarrow \infty$ , we have

$$V^I(b|\sigma) \geq \lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} V^{I,k}(b|\sigma) \geq \frac{b_1 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] + b_2 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2]}{1-\delta},$$

as desired.

The next proposition shows that as voters become patient, the continuation value from a challenger converges to the upper bound established in Proposition 6.11, giving us a *qualified responsive democracy result* in the infinite-horizon with no term limit. Note that the extent of responsiveness differs from the result stated in Proposition 3.8 for the two-period model. There, we assume no discounting and let office benefit become large; here, we fix office benefit and let citizens become patient. There, policy choices of above average types increase without bound, and the continuation value of a challenger becomes arbitrarily; here, responsiveness is constrained by the preferences of the potential candidates for election. Like Proposition 6.12, the proof uses an optimality principle argument.

**Proposition 6.13** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning with two types, assume (C1)–(C3) hold, and let the discount factor approach one. For every selection of stationary electoral equilibria  $\sigma$ , the voters' (normalized) continuation value of a challenger converges to the expected utility from the ideal policy of the type 2 politician, i.e.,*

$$\lim_{\delta \rightarrow 1} (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) = \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2].$$

By Proposition 6.11, it suffices to show that there is no subsequence such that the limit of (normalized) continuation values strictly exceeds the expected utility from  $\hat{x}_2$ . To this end, suppose that  $\lim_{\delta \rightarrow 1} (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) < \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2]$ . Let  $\eta \in (0, 1)$  be small enough that

$$\eta \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] + (1 - \eta) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2] > \lim_{\delta \rightarrow 1} (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma).$$

Since policies are strictly ordered by type, (C1) and (C2) yield a cutoff  $\bar{y}$  such that  $\mu(2|b, \bar{y}) = 1 - \eta$ . The unconditional probability that the realized outcome exceeds this threshold in a politician's first term of office is

$$\Pr(y \geq \bar{y}) = p_1 \sum_x (1 - F(\bar{y} - x)) \pi_1(x|p) + p_2 (1 - F(\bar{y} - x)) \pi_2(x|p) > 0.$$

In  $k$  draws of a first-term office holder, the probability that the outcome never exceeds the threshold  $\bar{y}$  is  $(1 - \Pr(y \geq \bar{y}))^k$ . Choose  $\bar{k}$  sufficiently large that

$$\begin{aligned} \lim_{\delta \rightarrow 1} (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) &< (1 - \Pr(y \geq \bar{y}))^{\bar{k}} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] \\ &+ [1 - (1 - \Pr(y \geq \bar{y}))^{\bar{k}}] \left[ \eta \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] + (1 - \eta) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2] \right]. \end{aligned} \quad (27)$$

Now consider the voters' payoff, given a newly elected office holder, from the following plan: for  $\bar{k}$  periods, replace the incumbent with a challenger unless the realized outcome exceeds  $\bar{y}$ , in which case re-elect the incumbent and return to  $\sigma$ ; after  $\bar{k}$  periods, return to  $\sigma$  in any event. To simplify notation, let  $V^I(y \geq \bar{y}|\sigma)$  denote the voters' expected discounted payoff from re-electing a first-term office holder conditional on realizing an outcome above the threshold  $\bar{y}$ , assuming politicians continue to follow their equilibrium strategies. By an optimality principle argument, similar to the proof of Proposition 6.12, it follows that the equilibrium continuation value of a challenger,  $V^C(\sigma)$ , is at least equal to the expected discounted payoff from following the above plan. As well, by Proposition 6.12 and choice of  $\bar{y}$ , we have

$$V^I(y \geq \bar{y}|\sigma) \geq \frac{\eta \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1]}{1-\delta} + \frac{(1-\eta) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2]}{1-\delta}.$$

Let  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi_j^*(p), y \geq \bar{y}]$  denote the voters' expected utility from the probability distribution  $\pi_j^*(p)$  over policies, conditional on realizing an outcome above the threshold  $\bar{y}$ , with a similar convention for  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi_j^*(p), y < \bar{y}]$ .

Then the voters' expected discounted payoff from electing a challenger and following the above plan, assuming that politicians continue to use their equilibrium policy strategies, is:

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{k=1}^{\bar{k}} (1 - \Pr(y \geq \bar{y}))^{k-1} \Pr(y \geq \bar{y}) \left[ \frac{1 - \delta^{k-1}}{1 - \delta} (p_1 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|y < \bar{y}, \pi_1^*(p)] \right. \\ & \quad + p_2 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|y < \bar{y}, x_2^*(p)]) + \delta^{k-1} (p_1 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|y \geq \bar{y}, \pi_1^*(p)] \\ & \quad \left. + p_2 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|y \geq \bar{y}, x_2^*(p)]) + \delta^k V^I(y \geq \bar{y}|\sigma) \right] \\ & + (1 - \Pr(y \geq \bar{y}))^{\bar{k}} \left[ \frac{1 - \delta^{\bar{k}-1}}{1 - \delta} (p_1 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi_1^*(p)] \right. \\ & \quad \left. + p_2 \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\pi_2^*(p)]) + \delta^{\bar{k}} V^C(\sigma) \right], \end{aligned}$$

where the first summation represents expectations across paths  $(y_1, \dots, y_k)$  of outcome realizations such that the first  $k-1$  realizations are below  $\bar{y}$  and the  $k$ th realization is above the threshold. By construction, the above expected discounted

payoff is at least equal to:

$$\begin{aligned}
& [1 - (1 - \Pr(y \geq \bar{y}))^{\bar{k}}] \left[ \left( \frac{1 - \delta^{\bar{k}-1}}{1 - \delta} \right) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|y < \bar{y}, \hat{x}_1] + \delta^{\bar{k}-1} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|y < \bar{y}, \hat{x}_1] \right. \\
& \quad \left. + \delta^{\bar{k}} \left( \frac{\eta \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1]}{1 - \delta} + \frac{(1 - \eta) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2]}{1 - \delta} \right) \right] \\
& + (1 - \Pr(y \geq \bar{y}))^{\bar{k}} \left[ \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1]}{1 - \delta} \right].
\end{aligned}$$

Multiplying by  $(1 - \delta)$  and taking limits, we therefore have

$$\begin{aligned}
\lim_{\delta \rightarrow 1} (1 - \delta) V^C(\sigma) & \geq (1 - \Pr(y \geq \bar{y}))^{\bar{k}} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] \\
& + [1 - (1 - \Pr(y \geq \bar{y}))^{\bar{k}}] \left[ \eta \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] + (1 - \eta) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_2] \right],
\end{aligned}$$

contradicting (27). This establishes the desired result.

Departing from our restriction to stationary electoral equilibria, Banks and Sundaram (1993) show existence of an equilibrium in the class of trigger strategies, in which voters and politicians use history-dependent strategies that condition on past outcomes generated by an incumbent (which are always on her personal path of play) and not only on the voters' posterior beliefs. In particular, if the realized policy outcome falls below a given cutoff level during a politician's term, the politician shirks (i.e., chooses zero effort) thereafter, and the voter removes the incumbent from office. This approach is not without its shortcomings. First, even if the incumbent is a good type with arbitrarily high probability, there is always a positive probability that a bad outcome will be realized and the voter will replace the incumbent. Second, the exact value of the trigger is not pinned down in the model, and in fact a continuum of values can be supported in equilibrium. Third, the analysis relies on the assumption that all politician types are equivalent when they shirk; without this assumption, the trigger strategy construction breaks down, as voters may have an incentive to re-elect an incumbent who is a good type with high probability, even if it is known that she will shirk in the future.

### 6.3 One-sided learning with term limits

In the infinite-horizon model with a two-period term limit, Banks and Sundaram (1998) extend the existence result for the two-period model. We review the existence question and modify the proof of existence in Proposition 3.3 to obtain equilibria in which each politician type mixes over at most two policies. Equilibria in the presence of a two-period term limit are, however, qualitatively different than those in the simple version of the model with no term limit and those in the

two-period model: because voters cannot commit to decline the option of an untried challenger, high levels of effort cannot be supported in equilibrium. In fact, we show that as politicians become office motivated, the voters' expected utility from the policy choices of first-term office holders (therefore the expected payoff of a challenger) is bounded above by a level that is below the expected utility when the highest type,  $j = n$ , chooses her ideal policy,  $\hat{x}_n$ . That is, the form of responsive democracy illustrated in Proposition 6.13 for the model without term limits fails in the model with term limits, paralleling Proposition 5.8 for the pure adverse selection model and showing that the commitment problem of voters limits the effectiveness of electoral incentives.

In the model with a two-period term limit, we maintain (C1)–(C4) and extend our definition of stationary strategy profile to allow for politicians to condition their choices on the term of office, as obviously, a second term politician will simply choose her ideal policy; we let  $\pi_j^1$  denote the type  $j$  politician's mixed policy choice in her first term of office. With this modification, a profile  $\sigma$  that is deferential and monotonic determines an acceptance set of the form  $A(\sigma) = [\bar{y}, \infty)$ , where  $\bar{y}$  is a given cutoff outcome that is necessary and sufficient for re-election after an office holder's first term. Then stationary electoral equilibria are characterized by three conditions. First, the cutoff outcome must satisfy the indifference condition that, conditional on observing  $\bar{y}$ , voters are indifferent between re-electing the first-term incumbent and electing a challenger. Formally, letting  $V^C(\sigma)$  be the continuation value of electing a challenger common to all voters, this condition is

$$\sum_j \mu_T(j|p, \bar{y}) \left[ \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] + \delta V^C(\sigma) \right] = V^C(\sigma).$$

Simplifying, this means that the expected utility from the incumbent's policy choice in the second term is equal to the (normalized) continuation value of a challenger:

$$\sum_j \mu_T(j|p, \bar{y}) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] = (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma). \quad (28)$$

Second, each politician type, knowing that she is re-elected if and only if  $y \geq \bar{y}$ , mixes over optimal actions in her first term of office, i.e., she solves

$$\max_{x \in X} w_j(x) + \delta \left[ (1 - F(\bar{y} - x)) [w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta + \delta V^C(\sigma)] + F(\bar{y} - x) V^C(\sigma) \right],$$

and the first order condition for this problem is

$$w'_j(x) = -f(\bar{y} - x) \delta [w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma)]. \quad (29)$$

This parallels the politicians' objective function in the two-period model of Subsection 3.4, the difference being that the payoff from re-election is discounted and reflects the continuation of the game with a challenger taking office, and the politician's expected payoff from a challenger is endogenized in a more complex way. Third, as always, updating of voter beliefs follows Bayes rule: conditional on observing outcome  $y$ , the posterior probability that the politician is type  $j$  is

$$\mu_T(j|p, y) = \frac{p_j \sum_x f(y-x) \pi_j^1(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(y-x) \pi_k^1(x)}.$$

As in Subsection 3.4, we can consider the constrained version of the first term politician's optimization problem with objective function

$$U_j(x, r; V) = w_j(x) + r\delta[w_j(\hat{x}_j) - (1-\delta)V],$$

with the difference that we now include a parameter  $V$ , which in equilibrium will be the continuation value of a challenger. We use the formulation of (C3) from the preceding subsection,

$$(C3) \quad w_1(\hat{x}_1) + \beta > \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n],$$

which means that a first-term politician prefers to remain in office, even if she can return to the electorate and in all future periods, outcomes are determined by the ideal policy of the highest type. We assume provisionally that  $(1-\delta)V \leq \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ , and we will see that  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$  does indeed bound the (normalized) continuation value of a challenger in equilibrium, so the new (C3) means that all politicians are in principle interested in re-election. By (C3), the right-hand side of the first order condition in (29) is positive, and it follows that for arbitrary cutoff and continuation value, a politician exerts positive effort in the first term.

As in Subsection 3.4, an office holder will not choose policies below her ideal policy, and the politician will not choose arbitrarily high policies, so each type of office holder has an optimal policy in the first term of office. We impose condition (C4) to obtain the result that given an arbitrary cutoff and a continuation value  $V \leq \frac{1}{1-\delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ , each type of politician has at most two optimal policies. Again, the objective function  $U_j(x, 1 - F(\bar{y} - x); V)$  is supermodular in  $(j, x)$ , with the implication that optimal policies are strictly ordered by type. The arguments for these results proceed as for the two-period model, and we omit their formal statement and proof. Given cutoff  $\bar{y}$  and continuation value of a challenger  $V \leq \frac{1}{1-\delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ , we let  $x_j^*(\bar{y}, V)$  and  $x_{*,j}(\bar{y}, V)$  denote the greatest and least optimal policies, respectively, of the type  $j$  politician in the first term of office. It follows that optimal policies are strictly ordered by type, i.e.,

$$\text{for all } j < n, \quad x_j^*(\bar{y}, V) < x_{*,j+1}(\bar{y}, V),$$



and standard arguments imply that  $x_j^*(\cdot)$  and  $x_{*,j}(\cdot)$  are upper and lower semi-continuous, respectively.

Now consider mixed policy strategies  $\pi_1^1, \dots, \pi_n^1$  with supports that are strictly ordered according to type, and let  $V$  be a continuation value satisfying  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] \leq (1 - \delta)V \leq \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ . The induced cutoff for voters is the unique solution in  $\bar{y}$  to the equation  $V^I(p, \bar{y}|\sigma) = V$ , or more explicitly,

$$\sum_k \mu_T(k|p, \bar{y}) [\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_k] + \delta V] = V,$$

reflecting the fact that a re-elected incumbent chooses her ideal policy and is replaced by a challenger. Simplifying, we obtain the indifference condition

$$\sum_k \mu_T(k|p, \bar{y}) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_k] = (1 - \delta)V, \quad (30)$$

and we denote the unique solution by  $y^*(\pi_1^1, \dots, \pi_n^1, V)$ . Again,  $y^*(\pi_1^1, \dots, \pi_n^1, V)$  is a continuous function of its arguments.

Existence of equilibrium follows from a fixed point argument, as in the two-period model. In contrast to Subsection 3.4, however, we must complete an intermediate step, in which a cutoff  $\bar{y}$  and policies  $x_1, \dots, x_n$  determine the continuation values from re-electing a first-term incumbent, conditional on an outcome  $y$ , and from electing a challenger. Specifically,  $V^I(p, y|\sigma)$  and  $V^C(\sigma)$  are the unique solutions to the recursions

$$V^I(p, y|\sigma) = \sum_k \mu_T(k|p, y) \left[ \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_k] + \delta V^C(\sigma) \right] \quad (31)$$

and

$$V^C(\sigma) = \sum_j p_j \sum_x \left[ \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] + \delta[(1 - F(\bar{y} - x))(\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] + \delta V^C(\sigma)) + F(\bar{y} - x)V^C(\sigma)] \right] \pi_j^1(x).$$

Solving for  $V^C(\sigma)$  explicitly, we have

$$V^C(\sigma) = \frac{\sum_j p_j \sum_x \left[ \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] + \delta(1 - F(\bar{y} - x))\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] \right] \pi_j^1(x)}{1 - \delta \sum_j p_j \sum_x [(1 - F(\bar{y} - x))\delta + F(\bar{y} - x)] \pi_j^1(x)}. \quad (32)$$

This raises the technical challenge that the voters' cutoff is uniquely defined only when the (normalized) continuation value of a challenger is strictly between the

expected utility from the ideal policies of the lowest and highest types; yet it is possible, in principle, for  $V^C(\sigma)$  to exceed these quantities. Nevertheless, the continuation values generated by optimal policies and induced cutoffs can be appropriately bounded and a fixed point argument applied.

To convey the argument, we let  $V^*(\pi_1^1, \dots, \pi_n^1, \bar{y})$  denote the right-hand side of (32), after subjecting it to appropriate bounds. We then define the correspondence depicted below,

$$(\pi_1^1, \dots, \pi_n^1, \bar{y}) \rightarrow V = V^*(\pi_1^1, \dots, \pi_n^1, \bar{y}) \rightarrow \left\{ \begin{array}{l} x_j^*(\bar{y}, V), x_{*,j}(\bar{y}, V), \\ j = 1, \dots, n \\ y^*(\pi_1^1, \dots, \pi_n^1, V) \end{array} \right\},$$

where the supports of  $\pi_1^1, \dots, \pi_n^1$  are strictly ordered by type and satisfy  $\varepsilon$ -spacing, as in the proof of Proposition 3.7, and we allow for arbitrary mixtures of the optimal policies  $x_j^*(\bar{y}, V)$  and  $x_{*,j}(\bar{y}, V)$ . That is, policy choices and a cutoff determine the continuation value of a challenger; and with this continuation value, the cutoff determines optimal policy choices for the politicians, and policy choices determine a cutoff satisfying the indifference condition. This correspondence satisfies the conditions of Kakutani's theorem, and it admits a fixed point, which yields a stationary electoral equilibrium.

The next proposition states the existence result, with a characterization familiar from Proposition 3.7. Note that the equilibrium cutoff is always finite: otherwise, all types of politicians would choose their ideal policy, but then choices are ordered by type, so the cutoff must be finite after all.

**Proposition 6.14** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning with two-period term limit, assume (C1)–(C4). Then there is a stationary electoral equilibrium, and in every electoral equilibrium, there exist mixed policy strategies  $\pi_1^*, \dots, \pi_n^*$  and a finite cutoff  $y^*$  such that:*

- (i) *each type  $j$  politician mixes over policies in the first term of office using  $\pi_j^*$ , which places positive probability on at most two policies, say  $x_j^*$  and  $x_{*,j}$ , where  $\hat{x}_j < x_{*,j} \leq x_j^*$ ,*
- (ii) *the supports of policy strategies are strictly ordered by type, i.e., for all  $j < n$ , we have  $x_j^* < x_{*,j+1}$ ,*
- (iii) *each type  $j$  politician chooses  $\hat{x}_j$  in the second term of office, if re-elected,*
- (iv) *voters re-elect an office holder after the first term if and only if  $y \geq y^*$ .*

We fill in details omitted from the above argument. To begin, we specify an upper bound  $\bar{x}$  on optimal policies and a sufficiently large interval  $[y_L, y_H]$  paralleling the proof of Proposition 3.7, so that for some  $\varepsilon > 0$ , optimal policies of different types are separated by a distance of at least  $\varepsilon$  for all possible continuation values, i.e., for all  $\bar{y}$ , all  $V$  with  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] \leq (1 - \delta)V \leq \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ , and all  $j < n$ , we have  $|x_{*,j+1}(\bar{y}, V) - x_j^*(\bar{y}, V)| > \varepsilon$ . We again represent a profile of mixed policy strategies with support in  $[0, \bar{x}]$  and satisfying  $\varepsilon$ -spacing by a  $3n$ -tuple  $(x, z, r)$ , and we let  $D^\varepsilon$  denote the nonempty, compact, and convex set of these profiles. Given  $V$  with  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1] \leq (1 - \delta)V \leq \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ , we let  $y^*(x, z, r, V)$  denote the induced cutoff of the voters, and we let  $\bar{Y}$  be a convex, compact set containing the possible values of the induced cutoff as policy strategies range over  $D^\varepsilon$  and continuation values range over the interval. Letting  $RHS$  denote the right-hand side of (32), we define

$$V^*(x, z, r, \bar{y}) = \max \left\{ \min \left\{ RHS, \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]}{1 - \delta} \right\}, \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1]}{1 - \delta} \right\},$$

so that the continuation value of a challenger generated by the policy strategies of politicians by construction satisfies our desired bounds. Finally, we can define a fixed point correspondence  $\Phi: D^\varepsilon \times \bar{Y} \rightrightarrows D^\varepsilon \times \bar{Y}$  as follows. Given  $(x, z, r, \bar{y})$ , we find for each politician type  $j$  the optimal policies

$$x_{*,j}(\bar{y}, V^*(x, z, r, \bar{y})) \quad \text{and} \quad x^{*,j}(\bar{y}, V^*(x, z, r, \bar{y})),$$

and we let the type  $j$  politician mix arbitrarily over these policies, and we update the voters' cutoff to  $y^*(x, z, r, V^*(x, z, r, \bar{y}))$ . This correspondence satisfies the conditions of Kakutani's theorem, and thus  $\Phi$  has a fixed point, say  $(x^*, z^*, r^*, y^*)$ .

We must show that this fixed point determines an equilibrium, and to this end, we show that the constraints imposed in the definition of  $V^*$  are not binding. Since all politician types choose policies strictly greater than  $\hat{x}_1$ , it cannot be that  $V^*(x^*, z^*, r^*, y^*) = \frac{1}{1 - \delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_1]$ . Suppose  $V^*(x^*, z^*, r^*, y^*) = \frac{1}{1 - \delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ . Then it must be that conditional on realizing the cutoff  $y^*$ , the voters' posterior places probability one on the office holder being type  $n$ , i.e.,  $\mu_T(n|p, y^*) = 1$ . But by full support of  $f(\cdot)$ , this equality cannot hold, a contradiction. We conclude that  $(x^*, z^*, r^*, y^*)$  yields a stationary electoral equilibrium, as desired.

The analysis of the infinite-horizon model with two-period term limit has so far relied on a close parallel to the two-period model. Endogeneity of the continuation value  $V^C(\sigma)$  does not affect existence in an essential way, as the nature of this endogeneity is continuous, allowing the existence argument to carry over with few changes. This is not so for the qualitative nature of equilibria. Proposition 3.8 established that when the office benefit  $\beta$  is high in the two-period model, all politician types exert arbitrarily high effort in the first period, providing a strong

policy responsiveness result for that model. The limits of responsive democracy were revised in Proposition 6.11 for the infinite-horizon model with no term limit, the upper bound being the expected payoff from the ideal policy of the high type. In the general model with a two-period term limit, we find that equilibrium policy choices are subject to the same upper bound. The reason is that second-term politicians exert zero effort in equilibrium, and so the voters' expected payoff from electing a politician to a second term is bounded above by the payoff generated by the highest ability type choosing zero effort; and if first-term politicians' effort levels are too high, then the voter would rather elect a challenger, but then politicians will exert zero effort in equilibrium. As in the pure moral hazard model, the voter cannot commit to decline the option of an untried challenger, so *electoral incentives are attenuated in the model with term limits*. In fact, we state the next result in somewhat stronger terms: the voters' expected utility from the policy choices of first-term office holders—and therefore the continuation value of a challenger—cannot exceed the expected utility from the ideal policy of the highest type.

**Proposition 6.15** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning with two-period term limit, assume (C1)–(C4). For all levels of office benefit  $\beta \geq 0$  and all discount factors  $\delta \in [0, 1)$ , in every stationary electoral equilibrium  $\sigma$ , the expected utility to voters from policies chosen by first-term office holders is no more than the expected utility from the ideal policy of the type  $n$  politician, i.e.,*

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \pi_j^1(x) \leq \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n].$$

To prove the proposition, suppose that for some parameterization of the model, we have

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \pi_j^1(x) > \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n].$$

Recall that the continuation value of a challenger satisfies

$$\begin{aligned} V^C(\sigma) = & \sum_j p_j \sum_x \left[ \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] + \delta[(1 - F(\bar{y} - x))(\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] \right. \\ & \left. + \delta V^C(\sigma)) + F(\bar{y} - x)V^C(\sigma)] \right] \pi_j^1(x). \end{aligned} \quad (33)$$

Note that

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x (1 - F(y^* - x))(\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] + \delta V^C(\sigma)) \pi_j^1(x)$$

$$\begin{aligned}
&= \int_{y^*}^{\infty} \left[ \sum_j \left( p_j \sum_x f(\tilde{y} - x) \pi_j^1(x) \right) (\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] + \delta V^C(\sigma)) \right] d\tilde{y} \\
&= \int_{y^*}^{\infty} \left( \sum_k p_k \sum_x f(\tilde{y} - x) \pi_k^1(x) \right) \left[ \sum_j \mu_T(j|p, \tilde{y}) (\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] + \delta V^C(\sigma)) \right] d\tilde{y} \\
&= \int_{y^*}^{\infty} \left( \sum_k p_k \sum_x f(\tilde{y} - x) \pi_k^1(x) \right) V^I(p, \tilde{y}|\sigma) d\tilde{y} \\
&\geq V^C(\sigma) \sum_k p_k \sum_x (1 - F(y^* - x)) \pi_k^1(x),
\end{aligned}$$

where the second equality follows by multiplying and dividing by the denominator in the expression for Baye's rule. Thus, we infer from (33) that the voters' (normalized) continuation value of a challenger is at least equal to the expected utility from the policy choices of first-period office holders, i.e.,

$$(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) \geq \sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \pi_j^1(x). \quad (34)$$

Combining our observations, we have  $(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) > \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ , but the indifference condition (28) yields

$$V^C(\sigma) = \frac{\sum_j \mu_T(j|p, y^*) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j]}{1 - \delta} \leq \frac{\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]}{1 - \delta},$$

a contradiction. This establishes the result.

For the infinite-horizon model with no term limits, Proposition 6.13 establishes that the effort levels of politicians approach the upper bound from Proposition 6.11 as citizens become patient. This result fixes the office benefit at a given level and uses an optimality principle argument to deduce that the continuation value of a challenger converges to the expected utility from the ideal policy of the high type. Here, the analysis of the model with two-period term limit diverges from the model with no term limit, as the commitment problem of voters imposes further constraints on responsive democracy in the former model. We next show that for a given level of office benefit, the voters' expected utility from the policy choices of first-term office holders—and therefore the continuation value of a challenger—is bounded strictly below the expected utility from the ideal policy  $\hat{x}_n$  as we vary the discount factor. In fact, the statement of the result is stronger than this, in the sense that we can allow the office benefit to become large, as long as the discount factor eventually offsets the increase in office motivation. For the result, we add the Inada condition (C5).

**Proposition 6.16** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning with two-period term limit, assume (C1)–(C5) hold. For every constant  $c > 0$ , there is a bound  $\bar{u} < \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$  such that for all levels of office benefit  $\beta \geq 0$  and all discount factors  $\delta \in [0, 1)$  satisfying  $\beta\delta \leq c$ , in every stationary electoral equilibrium  $\sigma$  for parameters  $(\beta, \delta)$ , the expected utility to voters from policies chosen by first-term office holders is below this bound, i.e.,*

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \pi_j^1(x) \leq \bar{u}.$$

To deduce a contradiction, suppose there is a constant  $c > 0$  and a sequence of parameters  $(\beta, \delta)$  such that  $\beta\delta \leq c$  and for which the voters' expected utility from the choices of first-term office holders approaches the expected utility from the ideal policy of the type  $n$  politician, i.e.,

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \pi_j^1(x) \rightarrow \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n].$$

Note that the right-hand side of the first order condition in (29) is bounded, and thus, by (C5), we can bound the optimal policies of the politicians along the sequence by some  $\bar{x}$ . From the argument in the proof of Proposition 6.15, inequality (34) holds, and thus the voters' continuation value of a challenger converges to the expected utility from the ideal policy of the type  $n$  politicians, i.e.,

$$(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) \geq \sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \pi_j^1(x) \rightarrow \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n].$$

The indifference condition (28) then implies that the posterior probability that the incumbent is type  $n$  conditional on observing  $y^*$  goes to one, i.e.,

$$\mu_T(n|p, y^*) = \frac{p_n \sum_x f(y^* - x) \pi_n^1(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(y^* - x) \pi_k^1(x)} \rightarrow 1.$$

Because the equilibrium policy choices of the politicians belong to the compact interval  $[0, \bar{x}]$ , this implies that  $y^* \rightarrow \infty$ , and thus the probability of re-electing an incumbent goes to zero, i.e., for all politician types  $j$ , we have  $\sum_x F(y^* - x) \pi_j^1(x) \rightarrow 1$ . In particular, we have  $f(y^* - x_j^*) \rightarrow 0$  for each type  $j$ , and thus the right-hand side of the first order condition converges to zero when evaluated at the greatest optimal policy of the politician. It follows that  $x_j^* \rightarrow \hat{x}_j$  for each type  $j$ , but then

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \pi_j^1(x) \rightarrow \sum_j p_j \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j],$$

a contradiction. This establishes the result.

To apply the previous result for a given level of office benefit, say  $\beta$ , we simply set  $c = \beta$ .

**Corollary 6.1** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning with two-period term limit, assume (C1)–(C5) hold, and fix the office benefit  $\beta \geq 0$ . Then there is a bound  $\bar{u} < \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$  such that for all discount factors  $\delta \in [0, 1)$  and every stationary electoral equilibrium  $\sigma$ , the expected utility to voters from policies chosen by first-term office holders is below this bound, i.e.,*

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] \pi_j^1(x) \leq \bar{u}.$$

The preceding corollary is reminiscent of Proposition 5.8, which established a bound on responsive democracy in the infinite-horizon model of pure adverse selection with a two-period term limit. A difference is that the latter bound holds for arbitrary levels of office benefit, while Corollary 6.1 fixes  $\beta$ . This difference owes to the fact that voter utility is unbounded in the model with combined adverse selection and moral hazard, leading to the possibility that as office benefit increases, type  $n$  politicians choose arbitrarily high policies with sufficiently low probability so that the (normalized) continuation value of a challenger converges to  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ . To satisfy our equilibrium conditions, it must then be that the voters' cutoff  $y^*$  diverges to infinity, and type  $j < n$  politicians are re-elected with probability converging to zero. The next proposition makes these equilibrium conditions more precise and leaves open the possibility that the bound  $\bar{u}$  in Proposition 6.16 converges to  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$  as the product  $\beta\delta$  increases, approximating our responsiveness result, Proposition 6.13, for the model with no term limits as politicians become substantially office motivated.

**Proposition 6.17** *In the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and one-sided learning with two-period term limit, assume (C1)–(C4) hold. Let the office benefit  $\beta \geq 0$  and  $\delta \in [0, 1)$  vary arbitrarily subject to  $\lim \beta\delta = \infty$ . Then for every selection of stationary electoral equilibria  $\sigma$ , the voters' cutoff diverges to infinity; the type  $n$  politicians in their first term mix between policies that are close to their ideal policy and ones that are arbitrarily high, with small, positive probability on the latter; and all other type  $j < n$  politicians choose policies close to their ideal policies in the first term, i.e.,*

(i)  $y^* \rightarrow \infty$ ,

(ii)  $x_n^* \rightarrow \infty$  and  $x_{*,n} \rightarrow \hat{x}_n$ ,

(iii)  $\pi_n^1(x_n^*) > 0$  for large enough  $\beta$ , and  $\pi_n^1(x_n^*) \rightarrow 0$ ,

(iv) for all  $j < n$ ,  $x_j^* \rightarrow \hat{x}_j$ .

We first prove (i). Indeed, suppose there is a subsequence such that  $y^*$  is bounded, so going to a subsequence if needed, we can assume that  $y^* \rightarrow \bar{y}$ . We claim that for each type  $j$  politician, the least optimal policy diverges to infinity, i.e.,  $x_{*,j} \rightarrow \infty$ . Otherwise, we can go to a subsequence if needed to assume that  $x_{*,j} \rightarrow \tilde{x}_j < \infty$ . By the first order condition in (29), we then have

$$w'_j(\tilde{x}_j) = \lim w'_j(x_{*,j}) \leq -f(\bar{y} - \tilde{x}_j) \lim \beta \delta - C,$$

where  $C$  is the limit infimum of  $f(\bar{y} - x)\delta[w_j(\hat{x}_j) - (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma)]$ , which is finite. Since  $\lim \beta \delta = \infty$ , the right-hand side of the above inequality has infinite magnitude, a contradiction. Thus, we have  $x_{*,j} \rightarrow \infty$  for each politician type  $j$ , as claimed. But then the voters' expected utility from the policy choices of first-term office holders diverges to infinity, contradicting Proposition 6.15. We conclude that  $|y^*| \rightarrow \infty$ . Now suppose there is a subsequence such that  $y^* \rightarrow -\infty$ . Because policy choices are strictly ordered by type, it follows that for all  $x_1, \dots, x_n$  in the support of the politicians' policy strategies, we have

$$f(y^* - x_1) > f(y^* - x_2) > \dots > f(y^* - x_n).$$

Therefore, the coefficients on prior beliefs from Bayes rule are ordered by type, i.e.,

$$\frac{\sum_x f(y^* - x)\pi_1^1(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(y^* - x)\pi_k^1(x)} > \dots > \frac{\sum_x f(y^* - x)\pi_n^1(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(y^* - x)\pi_k^1(x)},$$

and we conclude that voters' prior first order stochastically dominates the posterior distribution  $\mu_T(\cdot | p, y^*)$ , which implies

$$\sum_j p_j \mathbb{E}[u(y) | \hat{x}_j] > \sum_j \mu_T(j | p, y^*) \mathbb{E}[u(y) | \hat{x}_j].$$

From the argument in the proof of Proposition 6.15, inequality (34) holds, and since  $\hat{x}_j < x_{*,j}$  for all  $j$ , we have  $V^C(\sigma) > \frac{1}{1-\delta} \sum_j p_j \mathbb{E}[u(y) | \hat{x}_j]$ . Using (31), we then have

$$V^I(p, y^* | \sigma) < \sum_j p_j \left[ \mathbb{E}[u(y) | \hat{x}_k] + \delta V^C(\sigma) \right] < V^C(\sigma),$$

contradicting the voters' indifference condition. Therefore,  $y^* \rightarrow \infty$ , as desired.

Next, we adapt the argument for part (ii) of Proposition 3.8 to show that for all types  $j$ , there is no subsequence of greatest optimal policy choices  $x_j^*$  that converge to a finite policy greater than the ideal policy; by the same argument, the least optimal policy choices  $x_{*,j}$  also cannot converge to a finite policy greater than the



ideal policy. Indeed, suppose that there is some type  $j$  such that  $x_j^* \rightarrow \tilde{x}_j$  with  $\hat{x}_j < \tilde{x}_j < \infty$ . Then for sufficiently large  $\beta$  and some  $\delta$  (which may depend on  $\beta$ ), we have  $\hat{x}_j < x_j^*$ . For these parameters, the current gain to the type  $j$  politician from choosing  $\hat{x}_j$  instead of  $x_j^*$  is non-positive, and thus we note that

$$\delta(F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*)) [w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma)] \geq w_j(\hat{x}_j) - w_j(x_j^*).$$

That is, the current gains from choosing the ideal policy are offset by future losses. Since  $y^* \rightarrow \infty$ , the limit of

$$\frac{F(y^* - x_j^*) - F(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1)}{F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*)}$$

as  $\beta$  becomes large (with  $\delta$  possibly depending on  $\beta$ ) is indeterminate, and by L'Hôpital's rule, the limit is equal to

$$\lim \frac{f(y^* - x_j^*) - f(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1)}{f(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - f(y^* - x_j^*)} = \lim \frac{f(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1) \left( \frac{f(y^* - x_j^*)}{f(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1)} - 1 \right)}{f(y^* - x_j^*) \left( \frac{f(y^* - \hat{x}_j)}{f(y^* - x_j^*)} - 1 \right)} = \infty,$$

where we use (C1) and (C2). Then, however, the future gain from choosing  $\tilde{x}_j + 1$  instead of  $x_j^*$  strictly exceeds current losses, i.e.,

$$\begin{aligned} & \delta(F(y^* - x_j^*) - F(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1)) [w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma)] \\ & > w_j(x_j^*) - w_j(\tilde{x}_j + 1), \end{aligned} \quad (35)$$

for some parameters  $(\beta', \delta')$ . To be specific, let

$$\begin{aligned} A &= \delta [w_j(\hat{x}_j) + \beta - (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma)] \\ B &= w_j(\hat{x}_j) - w_j(x_j^*) \\ C &= w_j(x_j^*) - w_j(\tilde{x}_j + 1), \end{aligned}$$

where  $A$  is evaluated at sufficiently large  $\beta$  (with  $\delta$  possibly depending on  $\beta$ ). Note that since  $\hat{x}_j < \tilde{x}_j < \infty$ , we have  $\lim B > 0$  and  $\lim C < \infty$ . We have noted that  $(F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*))A \geq B$  for sufficiently large  $\beta$  (with  $\delta$  possibly depending on  $\beta$ ), and we have shown that as  $\beta$  becomes large (with  $\delta$  possibly depending on  $\beta$ ), we have

$$\frac{F(y^* - x_j^*) - F(y^* - \tilde{x}_j - 1)}{F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*)} > \frac{C}{B}.$$

Combining these facts, we have

$$(F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*))A \left( \frac{F(y^* - x_j^*) - F(y^* - \tilde{x} - 1)}{F(y^* - \hat{x}_j) - F(y^* - x_j^*)} \right) > B \left( \frac{C}{B} \right),$$

which yields (35) for some  $(\beta', \delta')$ . This gives the type  $j$  politician a profitable deviation from  $x_j^*$ , a contradiction.

Now, suppose there is a subsequence such that the greatest optimal policy  $x_n^*$  of the type  $n$  politicians is bounded above by some policy, say  $\bar{x}$ . It follows that for all politician types  $j$ , we have  $x_j^* \rightarrow \hat{x}_j$ , so that the probability of re-electing an incumbent goes to zero, i.e., for all politician types  $j$ , we have  $\sum_x F(y^* - x)\pi_j^1(x) \rightarrow 1$ . Re-writing (32), we have

$$(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) = \left( \frac{1 - \delta}{1 - \delta \sum_j p_j \sum_x [(1 - F(\bar{y} - x))\delta + F(\bar{y} - x)]\pi_j^1(x)} \right) \cdot \left( \sum_j p_j \sum_x \left[ \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x] + \delta(1 - F(\bar{y} - x))\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j] \right] \pi_j^1(x) \right).$$

Taking limits as  $y^* \rightarrow \infty$ , and using L'Hôpital's rule in case  $\delta \rightarrow 1$ , we see that  $(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) \rightarrow \sum_j p_j \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j]$ . But we also have

$$\mu_T(n|p, y^*) = \frac{p_n \sum_x f(y^* - x)\pi_n^1(x)}{\sum_k p_k \sum_x f(y^* - x)\pi_k^1(x)} \leq \frac{1}{1 + \sum_{k < n} p_k \frac{f(y^* - x_j^*)}{p_n f(y^* - \bar{x})}} \rightarrow 1.$$

By the indifference condition (28), we then also have  $V^C(\sigma) \rightarrow \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_n]$ , a contradiction. We conclude that  $x_n^* \rightarrow \infty$ . By Proposition 6.15, it cannot be that the type  $n$  politicians place probability one on  $x_j^*$  as  $\beta$  becomes large (with  $\delta$  possibly depending on  $\beta$ ), and it follows that  $x_{*,n} \rightarrow \hat{x}_n$ , which proves (ii). Moreover, since policy choices are ordered by type, this implies that for all  $j < n$ , we have  $x_j^* \rightarrow \hat{x}_j$ . This proves (iv).

Finally, if there is a subsequence such that  $\pi_n^1(x_n^*) = 0$  for arbitrarily large  $\beta$  (with  $\delta$  possibly depending on  $\beta$ ), then (32) again yields the implication  $(1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma) \rightarrow \sum_j p_j \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}_j]$ , and choosing any  $\bar{x} > \hat{x}_n$ , we obtain a contradiction as in the previous paragraph. We conclude that the type  $n$  politicians place positive probability on the greatest optimal policy for sufficiently large  $\beta$  (with  $\delta$  possibly depending on  $\beta$ ), and Proposition 6.15 implies that  $\pi_n^1(x_n^*) \rightarrow 0$ . This proves (iii) and establishes the result.

## 6.4 Symmetric learning

A class of models related to the one-sided learning setting of the previous subsections are the symmetric learning models, inspired by Holmstrom's (1999) model of

career concerns. Here, a politician may be one of several valence types, but neither the politician nor the other citizens directly observe the politician's ability prior to the election; rather, voters and the politician receive public signals and update their beliefs about the politician's ability in the same way. Rather than being a preference parameter indexing cost of effort, the politicians' types are interpreted as an ability parameter, where outcome distributions for higher types dominate those for lower types. Political agency models using the informational assumption of symmetric learning encompass work of Persson and Tabellini (2000), Ashworth (2005), and Ashworth and Bueno de Mesquita (2008), discussed in Subsection 3.4. In addition, Martinez (2009) analyzes a three-period model in which effort is chosen in the first two periods before an election in period three, and he shows that in equilibrium, effort increases as the election is approached, and he discusses equilibrium dynamics for the finite-horizon model using numerical methods.

An advantage of the symmetric learning model over the pure moral hazard model is that it precludes some arbitrariness of the equilibrium selection, as the trivial "shirking equilibrium" will not generally persist: instead of shirking, an office holder will have an incentive to manipulate the updating of the voter's beliefs to increase her chances of re-election. An advantage over the one-sided learning model is that politicians and voters update their beliefs the same way, precluding complications due to private information; because information is symmetric, all types of politicians face the same optimization problem and make the same policy choice along the equilibrium path of play. Nevertheless, this class of models encounters the same issues with equilibrium existence as does the model with private information: as in Subsections 3.4 and 6.3, equilibria must solve a non-trivial fixed point problem, where the voters' cutoff rule determines an optimal effort choice for an office holder, and the effort choice of the politicians determines (via Bayes rule) a cutoff for the voters; and again, as in Figures 1 and 5, the optimization problem of an office holder suffers from potential non-convexities.

Modifying the formalism of the dynamic elections framework slightly, the utility of a politician is now  $w(x) = v(x) - c(x)$  and is independent of type, and we let  $\hat{x}$  denote the unique ideal policy of the politicians. Given policy choice  $x$  by a type  $j$  politician, the outcome  $y$  is realized from the density  $f_j(y - x)$ . To bring this closer to the framework of this paper, we fix parameters  $\tilde{z}_1 < \tilde{z}_2 < \dots < \tilde{z}_n$  for each politician type, and we simply assume that  $f_j(y - x) = f(y - \tilde{z}_j - x)$ , effectively incrementing the policy choices of higher types by larger amounts. Then under (C1) and (C2), higher outcomes are evidence that the politician is a higher type. We let  $\tilde{F}$  be the ex ante distribution function, so that  $\tilde{F}(y|x) = \sum_j p_j F(y - \tilde{z}_j - x)$  is the probability of an outcome realization below  $y$  given policy choice  $x$ ; and we let  $\tilde{f}(y|x)$  be the associated ex ante density. We let  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|x, j]$  denote the voters' expected utility when a type  $j$  politician chooses  $x$ . Note that if the density  $f(\cdot)$

satisfies (C1) and (C2), then it does not follow that the ex ante density inherits these properties, so to maintain desirable quasi-concavity properties of politician payoffs, we strengthen these conditions to apply to the ex ante density  $\tilde{f}$  as well.

Existence of equilibrium in the model without term limits is an open question that is fraught with the same technical difficulties encountered in the analysis of the model of adverse selection and moral hazard without term limits. We therefore focus in this subsection on the model with a two-period term limit. Without going into formalities, we modify the concept of stationary electoral equilibrium so that policy choices are independent of the office holder's type (since politicians do not observe their own types), and we let politicians condition their choices on the term of office; of course, in equilibrium all politicians choose the ideal policy  $\hat{x}$  in their second term, if re-elected. As always, the strategies of voters are summarized by a cutoff  $\bar{y}$  such that a first-term incumbent is re-elected if and only if the realized outcome satisfies  $y \geq \bar{y}$ . Letting  $V^C(\sigma)$  be the continuation value of a challenger, the voters' cutoff must satisfy the indifference condition

$$\sum_j \mu_T(j|p, \bar{y}) \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}, j] = (1 - \delta)V^C(\sigma)$$

in equilibrium. In the first term of office, a politician chooses policy to solve

$$\max_{x \in X} w(x) + \delta \left[ (1 - \tilde{F}(\bar{y}|x)) [w(\hat{x}) + \beta + \delta V^C(\sigma)] + \tilde{F}(\bar{y}|x) V^C(\sigma) \right],$$

and of course the voters' posterior beliefs  $\mu_T(\cdot|p, y)$  are determined by Bayes rule.

We adapt condition (C3) in the obvious way, to account for symmetric learning, so that politicians prefer to be re-elected, and office holders will not choose policies below the ideal policy:

$$(C3) \quad w(\hat{x}) + \beta > \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}, n].$$

We re-phrase (C4) in terms of the ex ante density, so that given a cutoff  $\bar{y}$  and a continuation value of a challenger  $V \leq \frac{1}{1-\delta} \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}, n]$ , the politicians have at most two optimal policies, say  $x^*(\bar{y}, V)$  and  $x_*(\bar{y}, V)$ . Specifically, we assume that for all finite  $\bar{y}$  and all  $x, \tilde{x}, z$  with  $\hat{x} < x < \tilde{x} < z$ , we have

$$(C4) \quad \begin{aligned} \text{if } \frac{w''(x)}{w'(x)} \leq -\frac{\tilde{f}'(\bar{y}|x)}{\tilde{f}(\bar{y}|x)} \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{w''(z)}{w'(z)} \leq -\frac{\tilde{f}'(\bar{y}|z)}{\tilde{f}(\bar{y}|z)}, \\ \text{then } \frac{w''(\tilde{x})}{w'(\tilde{x})} < -\frac{\tilde{f}'(\bar{y}|\tilde{x})}{\tilde{f}(\bar{y}|\tilde{x})}. \end{aligned}$$

Now supermodularity of the objective function  $U(x, 1 - \tilde{F}(\bar{y}|x); V)$  plays no role, as policy choices are symmetric with respect to type by assumption.

Since politicians always shirk in the second term of office, it is not necessary for a re-elected incumbent to condition her policy choices on the updated beliefs of the voter. The absence of such conditioning, which is required in the model with no term limit, significantly simplifies the equilibrium analysis, and existence of stationary electoral equilibrium follows from arguments similar to the proof of Proposition 6.14. In fact, the situation is somewhat simpler in the present context, because an  $\varepsilon$ -spacing condition is implicitly built into the signal structure by the assumption that  $\tilde{z}_1 < \tilde{z}_2 < \dots < \tilde{z}_n$ . The domain of the fixed point argument then consists of just triples  $(x, z, r, V)$  such that  $0 \leq x \leq z \leq \bar{x}$ ,  $0 \leq r \leq 1$ , and  $\mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}, 1] \leq (1 - \delta)V \leq \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}, n]$ .

**Proposition 6.18** *In the infinite-horizon model of symmetric learning with two-period term limit, assume (C1)–(C4). Then there is a stationary electoral equilibrium, and in every stationary electoral equilibrium, politicians mix in the first term of office over at most two policies, say  $x^*$  and  $x_*$ , where  $\hat{x} < x_* \leq x^*$ , politicians choose  $\hat{x}$  in the second term of office if re-elected, and voters re-elect an office holder after the first term if and only if  $y \geq y^*$ .*

As in the model of adverse selection and moral hazard with a two-period term limit, we immediately obtain an upper bound on the voters' expected utility from policy choices of first-term office holders.

**Proposition 6.19** *In the infinite-horizon model of symmetric learning with two-period term limit, assume (C1)–(C4). For all levels of office benefit  $\beta \geq 0$  and all discount factors  $\delta \in [0, 1)$ , in every stationary electoral equilibrium  $\sigma$ , the expected utility to voters from policies chosen by first-term office holders is no more than the discounted expected utility from the choice of the ideal policy by the type  $n$  politician, i.e.,*

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x, j] \pi^1(x) \leq \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}, n].$$

The next proposition parallels the characterization in Corollary 6.1 by showing that for a given level of office benefit, the (normalized) continuation value of a challenger is bounded strictly below the voters' expected utility from the choice of the ideal point  $\hat{x}$  by the highest type of politician.

**Proposition 6.20** *In the infinite-horizon model of symmetric learning with two-period term limit, assume (C1)–(C5) hold, and fix the office benefit  $\beta \geq 0$ . Then there is a bound  $\bar{u} < \mathbb{E}[u(y)|\hat{x}, n]$  such that for all discount factors  $\delta \in [0, 1)$  and*

every stationary electoral equilibrium  $\sigma$ , the expected utility to voters from policies chosen by first-term office holders is below this bound, i.e.,

$$\sum_j p_j \sum_x \mathbb{E}[u(y)|x, j] \pi^1(x) \leq \bar{u}.$$

Finally, paralleling Proposition 6.17, we note that politicians must place positive probability on arbitrarily high policies (with arbitrarily low effort) as the benefit of office increases. Here, we simplify the statement of the result by fixing the discount factor.

**Proposition 6.21** *In the infinite-horizon model of symmetric learning with two-period term limit, assume (C1)–(C4) hold, fix the discount factor  $\delta \in [0, 1)$ , and let the office benefit  $\beta \geq 0$  be arbitrarily large. Then for every selection of stationary electoral equilibria  $\sigma$ , the voters' cutoff diverges to infinity, and first-term office holders mix between policies that are close to the ideal policy and ones that are arbitrarily high, with small, positive probability on the latter, i.e.,*

(i)  $y^* \rightarrow \infty$ ,

(ii)  $x^* \rightarrow \infty$  and  $x_* \rightarrow \hat{x}$ ,

(iii)  $\pi^1(x^*) > 0$  for large enough  $\beta$  and  $\pi^1(x^*) \rightarrow 0$ .

## 7 Applied work

In this section, we touch on the applied literature related to the dynamic elections framework. Topics that have received attention include the possibility of political inefficiency, the effectiveness of elections in attaining accountability, and the effect of term limits, partisanship, and information on accountability. There is, in addition, a large applied literature on the existence of political cycles of different types. Besley and Case (2003) and Ashworth (2012) provide reviews of the accountability literature, and reviews of the political business cycle literature can be found in Persson and Tabellini (1990,2000), Alesina, Roubini, and Cohen (1997), and Drazen (2000).

### 7.1 Political inefficiency

The literature on political inefficiency modifies the basic model in any of several ways. In the context of a two-period model, Besley and Coate (1998) show that coordination and commitment problems can lead to inefficient policy choices, as

potential Pareto improving choices by an office holder in the first period may affect choices in the second period or have adverse electoral consequences. Some authors, e.g., Persson and Svensson (1989) and Alesina and Tabellini (1990), have focussed on inefficiencies arising from the incentive to “tie the hands” of the future party in power via the issuance of debt; Aghion and Bolton (1990) consider a related mechanism, in which the issuance of debt can decrease the probability that a liberal party wins the election.

In the political cycles literature, which we touch on later, Rogoff and Sibert (1988) assume a distorting seignorage tax that competent politicians use to signal their types, and Persson and Tabellini (1990) permit a competent office holder to create unexpected inflation, expanding the economy and signaling her type. Coate and Morris (1995) introduce a special interest group and the possibility of a transfer from voters to the group, and they show that in equilibrium, bad types of politician may confer benefits to the interest group using a risky public project, rather than direct transfer.

Canes-Wrone, Herron, and Shotts (2001) and Maskin and Tirole (2004) consider pandering models, in which politicians sometimes choose inefficient policies in order to avoid the appearance of being a bad type; see also Prat (2005), Fox and Van Weelden (2012), and Morelli and Van Weelden (2013) for more recent papers in this vein. Morelli and Van Weelden (2014) consider a multi-task model in which an office holder allocates efforts across two dimensions and may focus on the issue that generates lower utility but greater electoral impact. Daley and Snowberg (2011) consider a similar model, in which politicians divert effort toward campaigning, which is unproductive but serves to influence voter beliefs. Casamatta and De Paoli (2007) show that inefficiency can arise when an office holder uses an inefficient production technology in order to conceal the state of the world.

## 7.2 Accountability

One of the fundamental predictions of the electoral accountability approach is that some, if not all, politicians will compromise their policy choices in order to improve their prospects for being re-elected. In sum, politicians respond to electoral incentives. As a corollary, politicians will tend to compromise less (or “shirk” more) when electoral constraints are relaxed. Early evidence supporting this comparative static is reported by Kalt and Zupan (1984,1990) and Zupan (1990), the latter paper comparing politician behavior before and after the decision to retire.

Another potentially useful test is to compare the choices of term-limited politicians to their choices earlier in their tenure of office. Using data from 1950–1986, Besley and Case (1995) find that there is a difference between the first and the second term in office for US state governors who are incumbents and face term limits:

state taxes and spending are higher in the second term when term limits bind. That is, state governors behave differently when not subject to re-election incentives. Besley and Case (2003) update these results using data from 1950–1997. They still find an effect on state spending; intriguingly, however, the earlier finding that lame duck governors generate higher state taxes is reversed, so that lame duck governors instead generate lower state taxes. Alt, Bueno de Mesquita, and Rose (2011) account for the fact that term limits vary from one to two terms across states, and they recover the earlier positive effect on state taxes.

Ferraz and Finan (2011) study the effect of term limits on accountability using data from an anti corruption program in Brazil involving random audits at the municipal level. They find that, consistent with decreased incentives for re-election, lame duck mayors are more corrupt than other mayors. Ashworth and Bueno de Mesquita (2006) consider a multi-task model and show that office holders in more competitive districts (who have greater incentives to compromise their actions to retain office) tend to substitute constituency service for policy making, and the findings of Dropp and Peskowitz (2012) conform to this prediction. Pande (2011) reviews work on the effect of information on accountability, with emphasis on field experiments in developing countries. In the US, Snyder and Stromberg (2010) use the mismatch between media markets and congressional districts to estimate the effect of media coverage on the incumbent on policy choices. They find that a better match between media markets and congressional districts improves the coverage of incumbent politicians, which in turn leads to policy choices that are more congruent with the citizens' preferences.

Sieg and Yoon (2014) provide a structural analysis of the infinite-horizon model of pure adverse selection using data from US gubernatorial elections from 1950–2012. They replicate and extend the empirical results of Besley and Case (1995), and they estimate the distribution of candidate ideologies for each party, the distribution of voter preferences, and the office benefit of politicians from each party. The authors find that candidates from the two parties are drawn from distinct distributions with non-overlapping support, and that the distribution of voter ideal policies is similar to, and somewhat more polarized than, the distribution of potential challengers. For the estimated parameter values, the authors find that election standards are tighter, i.e., the win set is smaller, in the presence of a two-period term limit, providing support for term limits.

### 7.3 Political cycles

The political cycles literature is extensive and spans from early models of Nordhaus (1975), Lindbeck (1976), and Hibbs (1977), who assumed myopic voters, to later models of Alesina (1987,1988a), Rogoff and Sibert (1988), Persson and



Tabellini (1990), Rogoff (1990), and others, in which voters rationally anticipate the unobserved actions of politicians (or parties) when elected to office. It has considered the possibility of political business cycles, in which electoral incentives affect real economic variables prior to elections, as well as partisan cycles, in which economic variables reflect the partisan affiliation of the politician who holds office, and political budget cycles, in which real economic variables are affected by fiscal decisions, which vary with the party in power, rather than by monetary policy.

The models considered in the cycle literature typically assume an office holder takes an action that is partially unobserved at the time of election and determines economic outcomes after the election. Moreover, to simplify dynamics of the models, it is commonly assumed that a politician's type is an AR-1 process. This structure does not have an exact parallel in the models surveyed above, but it is closest in spirit to the model of adverse selection and moral hazard with a two-period term limit. In that model, a first-term office holder has an incentive to exert effort before the election to positively affect the voters' beliefs; if we modify the model so that voters receive disutility from effort exerted in the previous period, then the effort choice is analogous to the choice of inflationary monetary policy in a political business cycle setting.

Empirically, Alesina et al. (1997) find support for "rational partisan" cycles in the US but not for the models of myopic voting or in which politicians engage in "opportunistic," pre-election manipulation of the economy. Data for OECD countries are roughly consistent with the US, with support for the rational partisan model. Shi and Svensson (2006) report evidence for political budget cycles in a large cross-country data set, with stronger effects in developing countries.

## 8 Modeling challenges

We conclude with a discussion of modeling challenges that are not addressed in this survey or the extant literature. We view all of these as important steps in the development and applicability of the electoral accountability literature. Of special importance is the second topic, concerning elections with an endogenous state variable. *First*, as we have noted, the question of equilibrium existence when politicians are not subject to term limits in the infinite-horizon model of adverse selection and moral hazard is an open question. Moreover, the characterization in Subsection 6.2 holds only for the two-type model. By analogy to Proposition 6.13, we expect that with an arbitrary number of types, the (normalized) value of a challenger converges to the median voter's expected utility from the ideal policy of the highest type, but in the absence of a foundational existence result, this extension could be vacuous. Although this question is essentially theoretical, many real-

world electoral settings involve incomplete information and learning over time, and its resolution is an important step for the applicability of the dynamic electoral framework. Proof of equilibrium existence would be necessary, for example, in comparing voter welfare in the model of adverse selection and moral hazard with and without term limits.

*Second*—and of paramount importance for applications—the framework must be extended to accommodate a state variable that evolves over time. This is a necessary antecedent, for example, to the detailed study of the political determinants of growth, inequality, and redistribution, continuing the work of Bertola (1993), Perotti (1993), Alesina and Rodrik (1994), Persson and Tabellini (1994), Krusell, Quadrini, and Rios-Rull (1997), Krusell and Rios-Rull (1999), and Benabou (2000), some of whom assume a form of the median voter theorem. See also Piketty (1995) for a dynamic model of social mobility, where the state variable is the beliefs held by different generations, and Benhabib and Rustichini (1996) for a model of social conflict in which consumption decisions determine the evolution of capital stock. More generally, the detailed modeling of politics is relevant for the integration models of elections into dynamic macroeconomic models; see Battaglini and Coate (2007, 2008), Acemoglu, Golosov, and Tsyvinski (2008), and Yared (2009) for recent contributions in this spirit. Camara (2012) includes an extension to growth economies that preserve the stationary structure of his equilibrium. Duggan (2012) contains a general existence result for the complete information model with a general state variable and idiosyncratic preference shocks; moreover, the result allows for a political game played by multiple politicians each period. Battaglini (2014) analyzes a dynamic model of elections in which two parties simultaneously announce fiscal policy platforms each period, voter preferences are subject to idiosyncratic shocks, the variance of the shocks varies stochastically over time, and each party myopically maximizes the number of its elected representatives. He establishes existence and characterization results for Markov perfect equilibria in which players condition on the level of borrowing in the previous period (in addition to real variables), and he gives necessary and sufficient conditions under which political equilibria are efficient. Duggan and Forand (2014) allow for a countable state space and do not require preference shocks, but they assume ex post commitment, as discussed in Subsection 5.5.

*Third*, following the electoral accountability literature, we have considered the policy choice problem of a single office holder in isolation, but the paradigm must be extended to capture interaction among multiple political office holders, as in Alesina and Rosenthal (1996); more recently, Cho (2009) analyzes a model of political representation in a single-member district system, and Fox and Van Weelden (2010) and Fox and Stephenson (2011) consider the effect of a veto player in the electoral accountability framework. This is essential to better understand the ef-

fects of division of powers on long run policy outcomes, for the comparison of different political systems, and the study of constitutional design issues introduced in formal modeling by Persson, Roland, and Tabellini (1997) and Laffont (2000).

*Fourth*, and related, most current theoretical work on dynamic elections is typically interpreted in terms of a two-party, majoritarian system. This reflects politics in the US, but applicability of the electoral accountability framework would be significantly increased by incorporating structure of multi-party, PR systems. Austen-Smith and Banks (1988) and Baron and Diermeier (2001) consider two-period models of PR systems, while Cho (2014) considers an infinite-horizon model with an endogenous status quo. These models assume complete information, so issues of adverse selection and moral hazard, which are prevalent in the electoral accountability literature, do not arise.

*Fifth*, the models surveyed above abstract away from the role of money, through either special interest lobbying (e.g., Snyder and Ting 2008) or campaign finance; see also Dixit, Grossman, and Helpman (1997), Bergemann and Valimaki (2003) for common agency models of interest group lobbying. They also abstract from the role of media, particularly through information about the challenger's intended policies (e.g., Duggan and Martinelli (2011)), and from the role of electoral platforms as conveyors of information from candidates to voters (e.g., Martinelli (2001)). The incorporation of these realistic features of politics would permit the analysis of a number of interesting issues and could inform the current debate about the desirability of limits on campaign contributions or of media regulation.

*Sixth*, the framework should be extended to incorporate a meaningful model of political careers, including endogenous challenger selection and the possibility that a former office holder re-enters the political scene (rather than the current standard of a random draw without replacement). Such an extension may incorporate aspects of Mattozzi and Merlo (2008), in which the career decision to enter politics is endogenized in an overlapping generations setting.

*Finally*, the framework we have presented assumes that voter preferences are known to politicians. A more realistic framework, which we believe would preserve many of the results covered above (in spirit, if not literally), would assume "probabilistic voting," as in Lindbeck and Weibull (1993); see also Alesina (1988b) for a model of repeated elections with probabilistic voting.

## References

- Acemoglu, D., Golosov, M., Tsyvinski, A., 2008. Political economy of mechanisms. *Econometrica* 76, 619–641.

- Acemoglu, D., Johnson, S., Robinson, J., 2005. Institutions as a fundamental cause of long-run growth. *Handbook of Economic Growth* 1A, 385–472.
- Aghion, P., Bolton, P., 1990. Government domestic debt and the risk of default: A political-economic model of the strategic role of debt, in: Dornbusch, R., Draghi, M. (Eds.), *Public Debt Management: Theory and History*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Alesina, A., 1987. Macroeconomic policy in a two-party system as a repeated game. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 102, 651–678.
- Alesina, A., 1988a. Credibility and policy convergence in a two-party system with rational voters. *American Economic Review* 78, 796–806.
- Alesina, A., 1988b. Macroeconomics and politics. *NBER Macroeconomics Annual* 3, 13–52.
- Alesina, A., Rodrik, D., 1994. Distributive politics and economic growth. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 109, 465–490.
- Alesina, A., Rosenthal, H., 1996. A theory of divided government. *Econometrica* 64, 1311–1341.
- Alesina, A., Roubini, N., Cohen, G., 1997. *Political Cycles and the Macroeconomy*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Alesina, A., Tabellini, G., 1990. A positive theory of budget deficits and government debt. *Review of Economic Studies* 57, 403–414.
- Alt, J., de Mesquita, E.B., Rose, S., 2011. Disentangling accountability and competence in elections: Evidence from us term limits. *Journal of Politics* 73, 171–186.
- Aragones, E., Palfrey, T., Postlewaite, A., 2007. Political reputations and campaign promises. *Journal of the European Economic Association* 5, 846–884.
- Ashworth, S., 2005. Reputational dynamics and political careers. *Journal of Law, Economics, and Organization* 21, 441–466.
- Ashworth, S., 2012. Electoral accountability: Recent theoretical and empirical work. *Annual Review of Political Science* 15, 183–201.
- Ashworth, S., Bueno de Mesquita, E., 2008. Electoral selection, strategic challenger entry, and the incumbency advantage. *Journal of Politics* 70, 1006–1025.

- Ashworth, S., de Mesquita, E.B., 2006. Delivering the goods: Legislative particularism in different electoral and institutional settings. *Journal of Politics* 68, 169–179.
- Ashworth, S., de Mesquita, E.B., 2014. Is voter competence good for voters? information, rationality, and democratic performance. *American Political Science Review* forthcoming.
- Austen-Smith, D., Banks, J., 1988. Elections, coalitions, and legislative outcomes. *American Political Science Review* 82, 405–422.
- Austen-Smith, D., Banks, J., 1989. Electoral accountability and incumbency, in: Peter Ordeshook (Ed.), *Models of Strategic Choice in Politics*. University of Michigan Press.
- Banks, J., Duggan, J., 2000. A bargaining model of collective choice. *American Political Science Review* 94, 73–88.
- Banks, J., Duggan, J., 2008. A dynamic model of democratic elections in multidimensional policy spaces. *Quarterly Journal of Political Science* 3, 269–299.
- Banks, J., Sundaram, R., 1993. Adverse selection and moral hazard in a repeated election model, in: William Barnett et al. (Ed.), *Political Economy: Institutions, Information, Competition, and Representation*. Cambridge University Press.
- Banks, J., Sundaram, R., 1998. Optimal retention in agency problems. *Journal of Economic Theory* 82, 293–323.
- Barganza, J.C., 2000. Two roles for elections: Disciplining the incumbent and selecting a competent candidate. *Public Choice* 105, 165–193.
- Baron, D., Diermeier, D., 2001. Elections, governments, and parliaments in proportional representation systems. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 116, 933–967.
- Baron, D., Ferejohn, J., 1989. Bargaining in legislatures. *American Political Science Review* 83, 1181–1206.
- Barro, R., 1973. The control of politicians: An economic model. *Public Choice* 14, 19–42.
- Bassetto, M., Benhabib, J., 2006. Redistribution, taxes, and the median voter. *Review of Economic Dynamics* 9, 211–223.
- Battaglini, M., 2014. A dynamic theory of electoral competition. *Theoretical Economics* 9.

- Battaglini, M., Coate, S., 2007. Inefficiency in legislative policy-making: A dynamic analysis. *American Economic Review* 97, 118–149.
- Battaglini, M., Coate, S., 2008. A dynamic theory of public spending, taxation, and debt. *American Economic Review* 98, 201–236.
- Benabou, R., 2000. Unequal societies: Income distribution and the social contract. *American Economic Review* 90, 96–129.
- Benhabib, J., Rustichini, A., 1996. Social conflict and growth. *Journal of Economic Growth* 1, 125–142.
- Bergemann, D., Valimaki, J., 2003. Dynamic common agency. *Journal of Economic Theory* 111, 23–48.
- Bernhardt, D., Camara, O., Squintani, F., 2011. Competence and ideology. *Review of Economic Studies* 78, 487–522.
- Bernhardt, D., Campuzano, L., Squintani, F., Camara, O., 2009. On the benefits of party competition. *Games and Economic Behavior* 66, 685–707.
- Bernhardt, D., Dubey, S., Hughson, E., 2004. Term limits and pork barrel politics. *Journal of Public Economics* 88, 2383–2422.
- Bertola, G., 1993. Factor shares and savings in endogenous growth. *American Economic Review* 83, 1184–1210.
- Besley, T., 2006. *Principled Agents? The Political Economy of Good Government*. Oxford University Press.
- Besley, T., Coate, S., 1997. An economic model of representative democracy. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 112, 85–114.
- Besley, T., Coate, S., 1998. Sources of inefficiency in a representative democracy: A dynamic analysis. *American Economic Review* 88, 139–156.
- Calvert, R., 1985. Robustness of the multi-dimensional voting model: Candidate motivations, uncertainty and convergence. *American Journal of Political Science* 29, 69–95.
- Camara, O., 2012. Economic policies of heterogeneous politicians. Unpublished paper .
- Canes-Wrone, B., Herron, M., Shotts, K., 2001. Leadership and pandering: A theory of executive policymaking. *American Journal of Political Science* 45, 532–550.

- Casamatta, G., Paoli, C.D., 2007. Inefficient public provision in a repeated elections model. *Journal of Public Economic Theory* 9, 1103–1126.
- Cho, S.j., 2009. Retrospective voting and political representation. *American Journal of Political Science* 53, 276–291.
- Cho, S.j., 2014. Three-party competition in parliamentary democracy with proportional representation. Unpublished paper .
- Coughlin, P., Nitzan, S., 1981. Electoral outcomes with probabilistic voting and Nash social welfare maxima. *Journal of Public Economics* 15, 113–121.
- Dixit, A., Grossman, G., Helpman, E., 1997. Common agency and coordination: General theory and application to government policy making. *Journal of Political Economy* 105, 752–769.
- Downs, A., 1957. *An Economic Theory of Democracy*. New York: Harper and Row.
- Drazen, A., 2000. *Political Economy in Macroeconomics*. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Press.
- Dropp, K., Peskowitz, Z., 2012. Electoral security and the provision of constituency service. *Journal of Politics* 74, 220–234.
- Duggan, J., 2000. Repeated elections with asymmetric information. *Economics and Politics* 12, 109–136.
- Duggan, J., 2012. Noisy stochastic games. *Econometrica* 80, 2017–2045.
- Duggan, J., 2014a. A folk theorem for repeated elections with adverse selection. *Political Science Research and Methods* forthcoming.
- Duggan, J., 2014b. Majority voting over lotteries: Conditions for existence of a decisive voter. *Economics Bulletin* 34, 263–270.
- Duggan, J., Fey, M., 2006. Repeated downsian electoral competition. *International Journal of Game Theory* 35, 39–69.
- Duggan, J., Forand, J.G., 2014. Markovian elections. Unpublished paper .
- Duggan, J., Martinelli, C., 2011. A spatial theory of media slant and voter choice. *Review of Economic Studies* 78, 640–666.

- Fearon, J., 1999. Electoral accountability and the control of politicians: Selecting good types versus sanctioning poor performance, in Bernard Manin, Adam Przeworski and Susan Stokes (eds.), in: Przeworski, A., Stokes, S., Manin, B. (Eds.), *Democracy, Accountability, and Representation*. Cambridge University Press.
- Ferejohn, J., 1986. Incumbent performance and electoral control. *Public Choice* 50, 5–25.
- Forand, J.G., 2014. Two-party competition with persistent policies. *Journal of Economic Theory* forthcoming.
- Fox, J., Stephenson, M., 2011. Judicial review as a response to political posturing. *American Political Science Review* 105, 397–414.
- Fox, J., Weelden, R.V., 2010. Partisanship and the effectiveness of oversight. *Journal of Public Economics* 94, 684–697.
- Fox, J., Weelden, R.V., 2012. Costly transparency. *Journal of Public Economics* 96, 142–150.
- Herrera, H., Levine, D.K., Martinelli, C., 2008. Policy platforms, campaign spending and voter participation. *Journal of Public Economics* 92, 501–513.
- Herrera, H., Martinelli, C., 2006. Group formation and voter participation. *Theoretical Economics* 1, 461–487.
- Hibbs, D., 1977. Political parties and macroeconomic policy. *American Political Science Review* 71, 1467–1487.
- Hinich, M., 1977. Equilibrium in spatial voting: The median voter result is an artifact. *Journal of Economic Theory* 16, 208–219.
- Holmstrom, B., 1999. Managerial incentive problems: A dynamic perspective. *Review of Economic Studies* 66, 169–182.
- Hotelling, H., 1929. Stability in competition. *Economic Journal* 39, 41–57.
- Kalandrakis, T., 2009. A reputational theory of two-party competition. *Quarterly Journal of Political Science* 4, 343–378.
- Kalt, J., Zupan, M., 1984. Capture and ideology in the economic theory of politics. *American Economic Review* 74, 279–300.



- Kalt, J., Zupan, M., 1990. The apparent ideological behavior of legislators: Testing for principal-agent slack in political institutions. *Journal of Law, Economics, and Organization* 33, 103–131.
- Kang, I., 2005. Strategic challengers and the incumbency advantage. Unpublished paper .
- Kramer, G., 1977. A dynamical model of political equilibrium. *Journal of Economic Theory* 15, 310–334.
- Krusell, P., Quadrini, V., Rios-Rull, J.V., 1997. Politico-economic equilibrium and economic growth. *Journal of Economic Dynamics and Control* 21, 243–272.
- Krusell, P., Rios-Rull, J.V., 1999. On the size of the us government: Political economy in the neoclassical growth model. *American Economic Review* 89, 1156–1181.
- Laffont, J.J., 2000. *Incentives and Political Economy*. Clarendon Lectures in Economics, Oxford University Press.
- Lindbeck, A., 1976. Stabilization policy in open economies with endogenous politicians. *American Economic Review Papers and Proceedings* 66, 1–19.
- Lindbeck, A., Weibull, J., 1993. A model of political equilibrium in a representative democracy. *Journal of Public Economics* 51, 195–209.
- Martinelli, C., 2001. Elections with privately informed parties and voters. *Public Choice* 108, 147–167.
- Martinez, L., 2009. A theory of political cycles. *Journal of Economic Theory* 144, 1166–1186.
- Maskin, E., Tirole, J., 2004. The politician and the judge: Accountability in government. *American Economic Review* 94, 1034–1054.
- Mattozzi, A., Merlo, A., 2008. Political careers or career politicians? *Journal of Public Economics* 92, 597–608.
- Meirowitz, A., 2007. Probabilistic voting and accountability in elections with uncertain policy constraints. *Journal of Public Economic Theory* 9, 41–68.
- Meltzer, A., Richard, S., 1981. A rational theory of the size of government. *Journal of Political Economy* 89, 914–927.

- Morelli, M., Van Weelden, R., 2014. Re-election through division. Unpublished paper .
- Morelli, M., Weelden, R.V., 2013. Ideology and information in policymaking. *Journal of Theoretical Politics* 25, 412–436.
- Nordhaus, W., 1975. The political business cycle. *Review of Economic Studies* 42, 169–190.
- Osborne, M., Slivinski, A., 1996. A model of competition with citizen candidates. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 111, 65–96.
- Perotti, R., 1993. Political equilibrium, income distribution, and growth. *Review of Economic Studies* 60, 755–776.
- Persson, T., Roland, G., Tabellini, G., 1997. Separation of powers and political accountability. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 112, 1163–1202.
- Persson, T., Svensson, L., 1989. Why a stubborn conservative would run a deficit: Policy with time-inconsistent preferences. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 104, 325–345.
- Persson, T., Tabellini, G., 1994. Is inequality harmful for growth? *American Economic Review* 84, 600–621.
- Persson, T., Tabellini, G., 2000. *Political Economics: Explaining Economic Policy*. MIT Press.
- Piketty, T., 1995. Social mobility and redistributive politics. *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 110, 551–584.
- Prat, A., 2005. The wrong kind of transparency. *American Economic Review* 95, 862–877.
- Reed, R., 1994. A retrospective voting model with heterogeneous politicians. *Economics and Politics* 6, 39–58.
- Roberts, K., 1977. Voting over income tax schedules. *Journal of Public Economics* 8, 329–340.
- Roemer, J., 1994. A theory of policy differentiation in single issue electoral politics. *Social Choice and Welfare* 11, 355–380.
- Roemer, J., 1997. Political-economic equilibrium when parties represent constituents: The unidimensional case. *Social Choice and Welfare* 14, 479–502.

- Rogoff, K., 1990. Equilibrium political budget cycles. *American Economic Review* 80, 21–36.
- Rogoff, K., Sibert, A., 1988. Elections and macroeconomic policy cycles. *Review of Economic Studies* 55, 1–16.
- Romer, T., 1975. Individual welfare, majority voting, and the properties of a linear income tax. *Journal of Public Economics* 4, 163–185.
- Schwabe, R., 2011. Reputation and accountability in repeated elections. Unpublished paper .
- Shi, M., Svensson, J., 2006. Political budget cycles: Do they differ across countries and why? *Journal of Public Economics* 90, 1367–1389.
- Sieg, H., Yoon, C., 2014. Estimating a dynamic game of gubernatorial elections to evaluate the impact of term limits. Unpublished paper .
- Snyder, J., Ting, M., 2008. Interest groups and the electoral control of politicians. *Journal of Public Economics* 92, 482–500.
- Van Weelden, R., 2013. Candidates, credibility, and re-election incentives. *Review of Economic Studies* 80, 1622–1651.
- Van Weelden, R., 2014. The welfare implications of electoral polarization. Unpublished paper .
- Wittman, D., 1977. Candidates with policy preferences: A dynamic model. *Journal of Economic Theory* 14, 180–189.
- Wittman, D., 1983. Candidate motivations: A synthesis of alternatives. *American Political Science Review* 77, 142–157.
- Yared, P., 2010. Politicians, taxes and debt. *Review of Economic Studies* 77, 806–840.
- Zupan, M., 1990. The last period problem in politics: Do congressional representatives not subject to a reelection constraint alter their voting behavior? *Public Choice* 65, 167–180.